

A N
E P I T O M E
O F T H E
HISTORY OF EUROPE,
F R O M
THE REIGN OF CHARLEMAGNE,
T O T H E
BEGINNING OF THE REIGN OF GEORGE III.

BY SIR WILLIAM O'DOGHERTY.



L O N D O N :
PRINTED FOR T. HOOKHAM, NEW BOND-STREET.

MDCCLXXXVIII.

TO HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS

GEORGE, PRINCE OF WALES,

THIS HISTORY

IS MOST^{LY} HUMBLY INSCRIBED,

BY HIS MOST OBEDIENT,

AND MOST DEVOTED

HUMBLE SERVANT,

WILLIAM O'DOGHERTY.

P R E F A C E.

THE histories of the commencement of most nations are so much involved in obscurity, and so intermixed with fable, that very little certainty can be derived from them. It is only from such æras, from whence public records and certain dates come before us, that we can be sure of facts, and form in our minds useful conclusions. The great change in the face of Europe that happened at the time of Charlemagne, and the authenticity of history since that period, naturally points it out as the epocha at which we may begin our historical researches, and gain that general knowledge of events, that may be

a 3 equally

equally useful and entertaining. It is from that time alone that we can be said to walk on sure ground ; that truth is developed from fiction, and that the historian can tread in a path different from that of poetry or oratory.

It is certain that, in the history of every European nation, prejudices have frequently obtruded, that have blinded candour, and been inimical to truth ; yet by reading the different accounts of divers historians, we may be enabled to establish facts, by comparing the several relations, and making the necessary allowances for the several views and interests of the relators.

To wade through the immense number of volumes that treat of modern history, either in general or in particular, requires more time and expence than the generality of mankind are either able or willing to bestow ; hence judicious abridgments have been well received by all who would gladly have a competent idea of the history of Europe, without descending to such details as may indeed be acceptable to the subjects

subjects of a particular state, when treating of that nation, but would be burthensome to those who have no peculiar interest in the minute circumstances.

Many have been the abridgments of french, german, spanish, italian, and british history; and some of them have been deemed highly useful, and very satisfactory; but we have not a compendium of the general history of Europe, for so long a period, as from the year 778, to nearly the present time, in any portable form; hence the author of the following epitome hopes it may not be unacceptable to the public.

This work pretends to be little more than a chronological series of facts; begun at first from no other motive than to serve as a help to the author's own memory. Being particularly fond of history, he employed almost every leisure hour in reading the best and most authentic historians. In this pursuit, every memorable occurrence was noted down; the precise date of the event carefully ascertained; and, having no

a 4

particular

particular bias on his mind, he coolly compared contradictory narratives, and marked those as true, which had the greatest weight of evidence in its favour. By slow and imperceptible degrees the work grew to its present size ; when the consideration that nothing of the kind hath been yet published, and the hopes that *his* labour might spare that of *others*, determined him to send it into the world.

The author is well aware, that many may object to this mode of studying history, and say it is useless, as it only tends to charge the memory with a number of dates, and the names of persons and events. That the real use of history does not consist in knowing what has been done, without penetrating into the causes of actions : for the true knowledge of history is the knowledge of mankind ; and, to study history properly, we must study the motives, opinions, and passions of men, and learn all the secret springs, turnings, and folds of the human heart.

All

All this is very specious ; it carries with it a splendid shew, and may make the author who pursues this course, appear as an able scrutinizer into human nature. But are the reasons alleged by authors for certain actions, always the true motives that urged these actions? Surely no. Manifestos of princes frequently hold out false lights ; and if the height of policy consists in concealment, how can an historian, at the distance of several centuries, (nay, even when only a few years have elapsed,) have the great sagacity to penetrate into the hidden recesses of the mind, unravel the mazes of a cabinet, or discriminate chance from design? To say that we can, is paying too great a compliment to human faculties ; and all we can learn from those who decide in the most peremptory manner, is the opinion of the historian, which may or may not be well founded. Let us illustrate this argument by example.

It is well known by all readers of the french historians, that when Henry IV. was so strongly opposed by the *league*, the emperor

peror of the turks (Amurath III.) offered to send him succours. Different historians have not failed to investigate the grand seignior's motives for that offer. One of them attributes it to the ancient alliance of France with the ottoman empire. Another writer says, it sprung from the hatred the turks entertained to the spaniards, especially at a time when the battle of Lepanto was fresh in their minds: whilst a third author very gravely accounts for the fact from a principal of religion: "for," says he, "Henry was at that time an hugonot, which in some sort rendered him an enemy to the pope, who was much hated by the turks." Indeed the ambassador who brought the offer, gives the affair another turn; and says, it was because the grand seignior hated the word *league*.

How far, we may ask, is the mind enlightened by the penetration of these authors? If we adopt the sentiments of one, then those of the others must be declared erroneous. And may not the author who simply relates the fact, and leaves the consideration

consideration of the motive to the investigation and sagacity of his readers, deserve the character of an historian, as well as he who obtrudes his own opinion, and would have posterity give it an implicit faith?

This observation is not made to decry the use of the larger histories, or to lessen their merit. It must be confessed, that they deserve to be particularly studied by all who have leisure, and are desirous to become perfect historians. All that is intended by it, is to shew, that abridgments are not without their use; that they are better adapted to the generality of readers; and, that a knowledge of facts may be agreeable, without any pretended disquisitions into the reasons that produced them. A compendium may be considered to history at large, as a map is to the extent of geography: it may point out the general outlines of countries, though it doth not enumerate *every* town or village in any one district.

The work before us is only an *Epitome of the modern History of Europe*. It assumes
not

not the title of an history: if, therefore, the author does all he promises, he hopes he shall not be condemned for not doing more.

.

C O N T E N T S.

CHAP.		Page
I.	THE Reign of Charlemagne, or Charles the Great, King of France, and Emperor of the West, _____	1
II.	Lewis the Debonair, _____	7
III.	England, towards the Ninth Century, —	13
IV.	The German Empire, under Otho the Great, —	17
V.	England, from the Death of Alfred, to the Norman Conquest, _____	21
VI.	France, in the Time of Hugh Capet, —	25
VII.	Spain, and the Empire of Constantinople, during the Ninth and Tenth Centuries, —	29
VIII.	The Empire of Constantinople, —	31
IX.	The German Empire, and the Italian States, to the Death of Henry V. _____	33
X.	England, from the Battle of Hastings, to the Death of Henry I. _____	44
XI.	France, under Philip I. and Lewis VI. with an Account of the first Crusade, —	51
XII.	The German Empire, and Italy, from the Death of Henry V. to the Election of Frederick I. surnamed Barbarossa, —	57
XIII.	France, under Lewis VII. and the second Crusade, _____	60
XIV.	England, from Henry I. to the Accession of Henry II. _____	63
XV.	France and England, during the Reign of Henry II. _____	65
XVI.	The German Empire, and Italy, under Frederick, surnamed Barbarossa, _____	73
XVII.	France and England, from the Death of Henry II. to the Reign of Edward I. —	76
XVIII.	France, from the Reign of Philip Augustus, to the End of the Reign of Lewis IX. or St. Lewis, _____	86
XIX.	The German Empire, and Italy, from the Accession of Henry IV. to the Election of Rodolph of Hapsburg; with some Account of the Crusades, _____	89
XX.	Spain, to the End of the Thirteenth Century, —	95
XXI.	England, during the Reign of Edward I. —	98

CHAP.	Page
XXII. Britain, during the Reign of Edward II.	105
XXIII. The German Empire, and Italy, from the Election of Rodolph of Hapsburg, to the Death of Henry VII.	118
XXIV. France, from the Death of St. Lewis, till the Accession of the House of Valois, .	117
XXV. England, Scotland, France, and Spain, during the Reign of Edward III.	123
XXVI. The German Empire, and Italy, from the Election of Lewis of Bavaria, to the Death of Charles IV.	136
XXVII. England, from the Death of Edward III. to the Accession of Henry V. with some Account of Scotland, during that Period,	141
XXVIII. The German Empire, and Italy, from the Succession of Wincislaus, to the Death of Sigismund,	149
XXIX. France, from the Death of Charles V. to the Invasion of that Kingdom by Henry V. of England,	155
XXX. England and France, from the Invasion of the latter Kingdom by Henry V. to the final Expulsion of the English.	158
XXXI. The German Empire, and Italy, from the Death of Sigismund, to the Accession of Maximilian,	171
XXXII. England, during the Contest between the Houses of York and Lancaster, till the Accession of the House of Tudor,	174
XXXIII. France, from the Expulsion of the English by Charles VII. to the Invasion of Italy by Charles VIII.	192
XXXIV. The taking of Constantinople by the Turks, and Fall of the Greek Empire,	200
XXXV. Spain, from the Death of Peter the Cruel, till the Conquest of Granada, by Ferdinand and Isabella,	207
XXXVI. England during the Reign of Henry VII.	211
XXXVII. A general view of the Continent of Europe, from the Invasion of Italy, by Charles VIII. till the League of Cambray,	217
XXXVIII. Europe, from the League of Cambray, to the Death of Lewis XII.	226
XXXIX. A general View of Europe, continued from the Accession of Francis I. to the Death of the Emperor Maximilian,	230
CHAP.	

C O N T E N T S.

xv

CHAP.	Page
XL. The Discoveries of the Portuguese and the Spaniards, in the East and West Indies,	235
XLI. A general View of the Affairs of Europe, from the Election of Charles V. to the Peace of Cambray,	240
XLII. A general View of Europe, continued to the Peace of Crespy,	249
XLIII. The domestic History of England, during the Reign of Henry VIII. with some Account of the Affairs of Scotland,	256
XLIV. A general View of Europe, continued to the Peace of Chateau Cambresis,	263
XLV. Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, from the Union of these Kingdoms under Margaret Waldemar, surnamed the Semiramis of the North, to the Death of Gustavus Vasa,	270
XLVI. England, from the Death of Henry VIII. till the Accession of Elizabeth; together with some Account of the Affairs Scotland, —	273
XLVII. England, Scotland, and France, from the Peace of Chateau Cambresis, to the Death of Charles IX.	277
XLVIII. Germany, from the Resignation of Charles V. to the Death of Maximilian II. with some Account of the Affairs of Spain, Italy, and Turkey, during that period, —	290
XLIX. A general View of Europe, from the Death of Charles IX. to the Accession of Henry IV. to the Throne of France: including the Rise of the Republic of Holland; the Catastrophe of Don Sebastian, King of Portugal; the Execution of Mary, Queen of Scots; and the Defeat of the Spanish Armada,	294
L. A general View of Europe, from the Accession of Henry IV. to the Peace of Vervins,	307
LI. Spain, and the Low Countries, from the Peace of Vervins, to the Truce in 1609, when the Freedom of the United Provinces was acknowledged.	313
LII. The domestic History of England, from the Defeat of the Spanish Armada, to the Death of Elizabeth; with some Particulars of Scotland and Ireland,	316
LIII. France, from the Peace of Vervins, to the Death of Henry IV.	320
CHAP.	

CHAP.		Page
LIV.	A general View of the Continent of Europe, from the Assassination of Henry IV. to the Treaty of Prague,	324
LV.	A View of Europe, from the Treaty of Prague in 1635, to the Peace of Westphalia in 1648,	339
LVI.	England and Ireland during the Reign of James I.	344
LVII.	England, from the Accession of Charles I. to the final Abolition of the Monarchy,	349
LVIII.	The Continent of Europe, from the Peace of Westphalia, to the Pyrennean Treaty, in 1659, and the Peace of Oliva, in 1660,	358
LIX.	The Commonwealth of England, under Cromwell,	362
LX.	A View of Europe, from the Restoration of Charles II. to the Peace of Nimeguen, in 1678,	365
LXI.	England, to the End of the Reign of Charles II.	374
LXII.	A Sketch of the Affairs of Europe, from the Peace of Nimeguen, to the Revocation of the Edict of Nantz,	377
LXIII.	Great Britain and Ireland, from the Death of Charles II. to the Revolution in 1688; and the Battle off La Hogue in 1692,	380
LXIV.	The Affairs of the Continent, from the League of Augsbourg, to the Peace of Ryswick, in 1697, and of Carlowitz, in 1699,	386
LXV.	A general Sketch of the Affairs of Europe, from the Peace of Ryswick, to the Treaties of Utrecht and Radstat,	389
LXVI.	Death of Queen Anne, and the Affairs of England. Death of Lewis XIV.	400
LXVII.	A Sketch of the Northern Kingdoms, from the Battle of Pultowa, to the Death of Peter the Great,	402
LXVIII.	A Sketch of the Affairs of Europe, from the Years 1715, to that of 1739,	408
LXIX.	A Sketch of the Affairs of Europe, from the Year 1739, to the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 1748.	415
LXX.	A Sketch of the Affairs of Europe, from the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 1748, to the Peace of Versailles, in 1763.	432
		A N

A N
E P I T O M E
O F T H E
HISTORY OF EUROPE

CHAP. I.

*The Reign of Charlemagne, or Charles the Great,
King of France, and Emperor of the West.*

I N history, as well as in all other sciences, it is necessary to set certain limits to our enquiries, if we would proceed with certainty; and where utility more than curiosity is our object, we must even contract these boundaries.

The first æras of modern, as well as ancient history, are involved in fable; and the transactions of the immediately succeeding periods are handed down to us in barren chronicles, which convey no idea of the character of the agents, and, consequently, are equally destitute of instruction and amusement. Charles, the son of Pepin, on the death of his brother, Carloman, found

CHAP.

I.

A. D.

775.

CHAP. found himself singly at the head of the French
 I. monarchy; but, before we proceed to the history of this illustrious reign, it will be necessary to say a few words of the state of Germany at that time. Germany, at the accession of Charlemagne to the crown of France, was principally occupied by saxons; they were still pagans. This extensive empire was governed by an infinite number of independent tribes, under different names: every canton modelled itself into a separate republic; but in time of war they elected a king or general. Charlemagne, the most politic, and by far the greatest warrior of his time, maintained a war for thirty years against those barbarous, though brave and independent people, before they were thoroughly subdued. A desire of converting the saxons to christianity, seems to have been one of the principal motives for prosecuting this conquest; and, as they were no less tenacious of their religion than their liberty, persecution marched in the train of war, and stained with blood the fetters of slavery.

Witikind, so deservedly celebrated by his nation, was the most eminent saxon general during these hostilities. He frequently roused the drooping valour of his countrymen, and revived in their hearts the love of liberty and independency. Nor were they wanting to him in attachment, for which they severely paid. After an unfortunate revolt, when they went to make submission to Charlemagne, he ordered four thousand

and five hundred of their principal men to be CHAP. I.
 massacred, because they refused to deliver up
 their general. An equal instance of cruelty is
 not, perhaps, to be met with in the history of
 mankind; particularly, if we consider, that the
 Saxons were not Charles's natural subjects, but
 an independent people, struggling for free-
 dom.

Three other victories were necessary to reduce A. D.
 this nation wholly under his yoke. At length 778.
 christianity and servitude were cemented by
 blood. Witikind himself, wearied with misfor-
 tunes, was obliged to receive baptism, continu-
 ing ever after faithful to his engagements.

Almost every year of Charles's reign was fig-
 nalized by some military expedition. He
 marched into Spain, and carried his arms to the
 banks of the Ebro. The moorish governors of
 Saragossa and Arragon revolted, and implored
 the assistance of Charlemagne, offering to ac-
 knowledge him as their sovereign. Charles,
 willing to extend his empire on that side, crossed
 the Pyrenees with all expedition, and re-esta-
 blished the moorish governors under his pro-
 tection. In repassing the mountains his rear
 guard was defeated by the duke of Gascony.
 Here fell the famous Orlando, so much cele-
 brated in romance, and represented as nephew
 to Charlemagne. The precise time at which
 Charles sustained this disgrace is not known;
 nor do we find that he ever revenged his defeat.

CHAP. I. It was to the possession of Rome, and the empire of the west, that his ambition aspired, and an opportunity soon occurred. Desiderius, king of the lombards, father-in-law to Charles, having some dispute with pope Adrian I. ravaged the papal territories, or, as they are called, the Patrimony of St. Peter, and threatened to lay siege to Rome itself. In order to avoid the danger, Adrian resolved to have recourse to France. Accordingly he sent ambassadors privately to Charlemagne, not only imploring his assistance, but inviting him to the conquest of Italy; he engaged him also to repudiate the daughter of Desiderius without the least cause or formality.

Charles at length passed the Alps at the head of a powerful army, and the king of the lombards, abandoned by his own forces, shut himself up in Pavia, which was his capital. Charlemagne undertook the siege of it in the middle of winter; the city being reduced to extremity, was surrendered after a siege of six months; and all the terms Desiderius could obtain, were no more than a promise that his life would be spared. Thus expired the kingdom of the lombards, which had destroyed the roman power in Italy, and substituted their own laws in room of those enacted by the emperors. Charles claimed the kingdom by the right of conquest, and caused himself to be crowned with an iron crown;

crown ; which is still preserved in the little town of Monza. CHAP.
I.

After this ceremony he proceeded towards Rome, where, as he assisted at mass in St. Peter's church, the pope advanced, and put the imperial crown upon his head. As soon as the people perceived it, they cried, " Long life and victory to Charles Augustus, Emperor of the Romans !" A. D.
800. Leo, who succeeded Adrian, presented him with the imperial mantle, with which being invested, Charlemagne returned, amidst the acclamations of the populace, to his palace.

While he became emperor of the west, the empire of the east was vested in Irene. That empress, so famous for her courage and her crimes, who caused her only son to be put to death, after having deprived him of his eyes. She would have gladly effected the ruin of Charlemagne ; but knowing herself too weak to contend with him in battle, she resolved to marry him, to unite the two empires. While this negotiation was on the carpet, a revolution drove her from the throne which had cost her so dear. One of the principal causes of the fall of empires has ever been the error of dividing them among different princes. Charlemagne, by will, divided his dominions among his three sons, Charles, Pepin, and Lewis ; the particulars of this division are of little consequence, as Lewis only survived his father. It is necessary, however to ob-

B 3

serve,

CHAP. serve, that the italian provinces were assigned to

I. Pepin, which donation was confirmed to his son Bernard, with the title of king of Italy, and proved the ruin of that prince. Charlemagne associated his son Lewis with him in the empire, and died the year following at Aix la Chapelle,

A. D. his usual place of residence. The glory of the
814. French monarchy seemed to die with him : he was master of all France, Germany, and part of Hungary ; part of Spain, the Low Countries, and the continent of Italy, as far as Benevento ; but, to govern such an extent of empire, one must have the genius of a Charlemagne.

This great prince was not less amiable in private life, than illustrious in his public character : he was an affectionate father, a fond husband, and a generous friend : his house was a model of œconomy, and his person of simplicity and true grandeur ; he was fond of the company of learned men, and assembled them about him, from all parts of Europe ; forming in his palace, a kind of academy, of which he himself condescended to become a member ; in short, he was the phoenix of his age ; and though not altogether free from its prejudices, his liberal and extensive genius, which examined every thing, and yet found time for all things, would have done honour to the most enlightened period.

THE HISTORY OF EUROPE.

CHAP. II.

Lewis the Debonair.

THE history of Europe, during ages after the death of Charlemagne, is little more than a catalogue of crimes. Charlemagne was hardly in his grave, when his family and empire were desolated by a civil war. Lewis the Debonair, (so called on account of the gentleness of his manners,) was unable to support so great a weight of empire; and his piety and parental fondness, however amiable in themselves, enfeebled a character, already too weak, and an authority never respected. But his greatest error was occasioned by a blind imitation of his father's example, in dividing his dominions among his children. He associated his eldest son, Lothario, with him in the empire; his second son, Pepin, he created king of Aquitaine; and his third son, Lewis, king of Bavaria. Bernard, king of Italy, the grandson of Charlemagne, was offended at this division: he thought his right to the empire superior to Lothario's, as his father, Pepin, was the eldest brother of Lewis. This unfortunate prince revolted, was made prisoner, and condemned to lose his head; but his uncle, by a singular kind of lenity, mitigated his punishment to the loss of his eyes; and Lewis, in order

CHAP.
II.

CHAP. der to prevent future troubles, ordered three natural
 II. sons of Charlemagne to be shaved, and shut up in a convent.

Lewis had married a second wife, whose name was Judith: this princess brought him a son, afterwards known by the appellation of Charles the Bald, whose birth was the occasion of much joy; but proved in a short time the cause of many sorrows. For this son, there was no provision, the imperial dominions being already divided among the children of his first marriage; the empress, therefore, who had gained a great ascendancy over her husband, pressed Lewis to place his son Charles, on a footing with his other children, by a new division of the empire. Aquitaine and Bavaria were small kingdoms; from them nothing could be expected; but, Lothario's share was large, and might spare a little. Sensible of the wishes of his father, and prevailed upon by the entreaties of his fond mother, Lothario consented that some provision

A. D. should accordingly be made for his brother
 826. Charles; but he soon repented, and the three brothers joined in rebellion against their father; the most singular circumstance perhaps to be met with in history.

At first they shewed their discontent by murmuring; but the disorder was fomented by Walla, a monk of high birth, who had formerly been in the confidence of Lewis, but was now
 in

in disgrace. He declaimed against the court, and the empress in particular, accusing her with an adulterous commerce with Count Bernard, the prime minister. His schemes succeeded; the emperor was abandoned by his army, and made prisoner along with his wife Judith, and her son Charles. The empress and Charles were shut up in a cloister, and Lewis was obliged to abdicate the throne. But the feelings of nature, and the voice of humanity, prevailed over the prejudices of the age. Lothario was universally abhorred, and his father no less generally pitied; his two brothers united against him, in behalf of that father whom they had contributed to humble. The nobility returned to their obedience, and paid their homage to Lewis as lawful sovereign. He might now have ended his days in peace, but for the intrigues of the empress Judith; the object of whom was to engage Lothario in a scheme, by which Charles should become possessed of the kingdom of Aquitaine, at the expence of the children of Pepin. But Lewis, king of Bavaria, though not injured by this new division of the empire, was so much incensed at its injustice, as he pretended, that he assembled the whole force of his dominions. The old king marched against him, but was taken suddenly ill, and died near Mentz, in the 72d year of his age, and the 28th year of his reign. He left a crown, a sceptre, and a

A. D.
840.

very

CHAP. very rich sword to Lothario; by which it was
 II. supposed he left him the empire, on condition
 that he should fulfil his engagements to the
 empress, and her son Charles. His brother, the
 bishop of Mentz, observing that he left nothing
 to his son Lewis, then in arms against him,
 reminded him that forgiveness, at least, was his
 duty. "Yes, I forgive him;" cried the dying
 monarch, with some emotion; "but tell him
 "from me, that he has brought my grey hairs
 "with sorrow to the grave." Methinks, in
 reading the disasters which befell this too af-
 fectionate parent, we must, at least, feel a secret
 satisfaction, in seeing his unnatural sons, after
 his death, armed against each other. Lotha-
 rio considered himself as emperor, in the most
 extensive sense of the word, and resolved to
 make himself master of the whole imperial do-
 minions; regardless of his engagements with
 Judith, or her son, Charles the Bald; or, the
 right of his brother Lewis to the kingdom of
 Bavaria.

These two princes, united by a sense of com-
 mon interest, gave him battle at Fontenai, where
 fraternal hatred appeared in all its horrors. Lo-
 thario was totally defeated, and forced to divide
 the monarchy with his brothers. In this parti-
 tion, Germany fell to the share of Lewis, the se-
 cond brother, which has ever since continued
 separate from France, and has made a distinct
 empire,

empire. Charles the Bald got, for his portion, the greatest part of France.

CHAP.
II.

A. D.
855.

Lothario, some years after, took the habit of a monk; that, according to the language of those times, he might atone for his crimes; and, though he had lived a tyrant, he might die a saint. In this pious disguise, he expired before he had worn it quite a week. He divided his dominions among his children. Lewis had Italy, with the title of emperor; Lothario, the provinces between the Rhone, the Soan, the Menſe, and the Rhine, called, from his own name, the kingdom of Lotharingia, now Lorrain; Charles had Provence, Dauphiné, and part of Burgundy.

Thus was the empire of Charlemagne split by continual divisions, the source of continual wars; foreign invasions, conspired with civil dissensions, to spread terror and disorder in every quarter, but more particularly through France: the normans, or Men of the North, carried fire and sword into the heart of this kingdom, even to the gates of Paris; their fleets sailed up the rivers, and laid all the country waste; the success of their first expeditions excited the avarice of their indigent country-men, wherever they landed, they carried all before them.

At length Rollo, the most illustrious of this northern banditti, after having spread terror over all the maritime provinces of Europe, sailed up
the

CHAP. the Seine, took Rouen, fortified it, and made it
II. his head quarters. France was, at this time, at
her last gasp. Charles the Fat, had given only money to the barbarians; Charles the Simple, offered Rollo his daughter, and with her, part of his provinces; Rollo demanded Neustria and Brittany, which Charles thought himself very happy to give him. Rollo was worthy of his good fortune; he sunk the soldier into the sovereign, and proved himself no less skilled in the arts of peace, than those of war. Neustria, which henceforth took the name of Normandy, in honour of its new inhabitants, soon became happy, and flourished under his laws; sensible that the power of a prince is always in proportion to the number of his subjects, he invited the better part of the Normans, from all parts, to come and settle in his dominions. He encouraged agriculture and industry; was particularly severe in punishing theft and robbery, and every species of violence; so that the duchy of Normandy was, in a short time, not only populous and cultivated, but the Normans were regular in their manners, and obedient to the laws; a band of pirates became good citizens, and their leader, the greatest prince and the wisest legislator of the age in which he lived.

C H A P. III.

England towards the Ninth Century.

THE Saxons, who had over-run England, divided the country into seven kingdoms, governed by their respective monarchs. These divisions, or heptarchy, were united under Egbert. A union of government seemed to promise internal tranquility; but human foresight is very limited: a fleet of those northern adventurers, whom we have already seen ravaging France, under the name of normans, or danes, soon gave the english monarch reason to alter his opinion. A particular account of the dreadful ravages, that laid this wretched island waste, would be equally useless and unentertaining; suffice it to say, that England, for many years after Egbert, was a continual scene of devastation; the lands lay uncultivated, through fears of continual incursions, and the churches and monasteries were burnt to the ground; in this terrible situation of affairs, nothing appeared but objects of terror, and every hope was lost in despair; the wisdom and virtues of one man, was found sufficient to bring back happiness, security, and order; and all the calamities of the times found redress in Alfred. This prince seemed born not only to defend his bleeding country, but even to adorn humanity. He

CHAP.
III.
}A. D.
876.

suc-

CHAP. succeeded his brother, Ethelred, to a king-
 III. dom, more than ever divided into petty sove-
 reignties, most of them occupied by danes. Almost every year produced a succession of new pirates. Alfred, who was master only of a single province in the west, gave the enemy battle; and, at first, gained some advantage of them; but, pursuing this victory too far, he was worsted, by reason of the enemy's numbers; his troops fled, and he was deserted by every body; yet, he was still undismayed; he begged them to make one exertion more in defence of their possessions, their liberties, and their prince.

Thus abandoned by his subjects, this illustrious monarch obliged to lay aside the ensigns of his dignity, and assume the habit of a peasant; lay concealed, but not inactive; he made frequent and unexpected sallies upon the danes, who often felt the vigour of his arm, but knew not whence the blow came, or by whom it was directed; at length, a prosperous event emboldened the royal fugitive to leave his retreat, and enter on a scene of action more worthy of himself. Obdune, earl of Devonshire, being besieged in his Castle, by Hubbo, a celebrated danish general, made an unexpected sally upon the enemy, put them to the rout, pursued them with great slaughter, and killed Hubbo himself. The news of this victory was immediately carried to Alfred, who was happy to see the seeds of valour beginning to re-
 vive.

vive among his countrymen; but, before he would assemble them in arms, he resolved to inspect the situation of the enemy's camp, which he entered in the disguise of a harper; he observed the supine security of the ravagers, and their neglect of all military discipline: encouraged by these propitious appearances, he sent secret intelligence to his most powerful subjects, and summoned them to assemble, along with their retainers, on the borders of Selwood Forest; when, taking advantage of his previous knowledge of the enemy's situation, he surprised them, in their most unguarded quarter, and gained a complete victory.

CHAP.
III.
}

The danes were at that time divided by intestine factions; and, Alfred, who was no less able a negociator, than a courageous warrior, was, to the general surprise, unanimously chosen king by the danes and english.

After providing for the security of his kingdom, he employed himself in improving and polishing his country; he invited over the most celebrated scholars, from all parts of Europe; he founded, or at least repaired the University of Oxford, and endowed it with many privileges, revenues, and immunities; his laws were mild, but strictly enforced; he was the first that settled juries, and divided England into shires and counties, and encouraged the spirit of commerce among his subjects.

CHAP. This extraordinary man, who is justly con-
III. sidered, both by natives and foreigners, as the
greatest prince, after Charlemagne, that Europe
saw for many ages, and one of the wisest and
best that ever adorned the annals of any nation,
died in the year 901, in the vigour of his age
and the full strength of his faculties, after a life
of fifty-three years and a half; his merit, both
in public and private life, may be set in opposi-
tion to that of any sovereign or citizen, in an-
cient or modern times.

CHAP. IV.

The German Empire, under Otho the Great.

THE german empire, after it became separated from France, merits little attention 'till the reign of Otho I. This prince, deservedly stiled the Great, as being the most powerful emperor since Charlemagne, and who reunited Italy to the imperial dominions, was elected at Aix la Chapelle, in the year 936, by the unanimous consent of the diet there assembled.

CHAP.
VI.

He began his reign with the most upright administration, and seemed desirous to live in peace and tranquility; but his quiet was soon interrupted by wars, both foreign and domestic, which he had sufficient abilities to manage, and which terminated in his aggrandizement.

The hungarians, according to custom, invaded the empire, committing every species of barbarity. Otho soon put a stop to their ravages; he came up with, and defeated them with great slaughter. Immediately after his return from this victory, he was informed that the bohemiaus revolted; Bohemia was then entirely barbarous, and mostly pagan. Otho, after a variety of struggles, rendered it tributary to Germany; and also obliged the inhabitants to embrace christianity.

CHAP. No sooner did Otho find himself in quiet pos-
IV. session of the North, than the South attracted
his eyes; and a favourable opportunity offered
of gratifying his ambition.

The italians themselves, who were factious and feeble, could neither submit to be governed by their own countrymen, or remain free, invited him to pass the Alps.

When Otho entered Italy, he behaved as Charlemagne had done before him;—he caused himself to be consecrated and crowned emperor of the romans, by the hands of pope John XII. after which he took the name of Cæsar Augustus, and compelled the pope to swear allegiance to him, on the tomb where the body of St. Peter is said to be laid. The pope having thus given himself a master, in him, whom he only wanted for a protector, soon proved false to his oath, and entered into a league against the emperor; but, he wanted power to carry through the undertaking. Otho was strong enough to punish him for it; he called a council, in which he brought the pope to a formal trial; he convened the lords, bishops, and cardinals, in the church of St. Peter; where, in presence of the people, he publicly accused the holy father of having lain with several women; that he made a child bishop of Todi; that he had made a sale of ordinations and benefices; that he had put out the eyes of one of his own relations; and that he caused a
cardinal

cardinal to be castrated, and afterwards to be put to death ; in fine, that he did not believe in CHAP.
IV. Jesus Christ. However, this young pontiff, who was then only twenty seven years of age, appears to have been deposed, and Leo XIIIth elected in his room ; but John had the courage to stir up the romans again, and opposing council to council, Leo was deposed ; soon after this revolution, pope John was assassinated in the arms of one of his mistresses.

Otho re-inflated Leo in his dignity, and returned to Germany, covered with glory and success, and lived to enjoy the fruits of his victories two years in his native country ; he died in 973, after a reign of thirty six years ; during which, by his generosity and courage, he had justly acquired the appellation of Otho the Great, the conqueror of Italy, and the restorer of the empire of Charlemagne.

Otho the second, succeeded his father, and reigned about eight years, without any remarkable occurrence to arrest the attention of the reader.

Otho the third, elected emperor, succeeded his father at the age of twelve ; and his uncle and his mother disputing the administration, Germany was disquieted by a turbulent regency ; but when the emperor, who proved a brave and enterprizing prince, came of age, all things were soon reduced into order ; he defeated the danes,

A. D.
966.

CHAP. danes, who had invaded the empire, and entered
 IV. into a league with Eric, king of Sweden, Denmark, and Norway.

The affairs of the North being settled, Otho marched into Italy at the intercession of pope John XVth, who was persecuted by Crefentius. Alarmed at the name of Otho, which had so often proved fatal to their confederates, the rebels returned to their duty, and Crefentius was pardoned; but scarce had the emperor left Rome, than that licentious spirit again revolted; enraged at this fresh insult, Otho returned with a powerful army to Rome, which he took by assault; and ordered Crefentius to be beheaded.

The saracens, about this time, making an irruption into the Campania of Rome, the emperor, while he was assembling forces to oppose their progress, is said to have been poisoned by a pair of gloves, sent to him by the widow of Crefentius, whom he had debauched under a promise of marriage.

The empire sustained a great loss, in the death
 A. D. of this prince, who, was equally brave, resolute,
 1003. and just; as he died without children, Henry, duke of Bavaria, grand son to Otho the second, was elected emperor, and consecrated under the name of Henry the Second.

C H A P. V.

England, from the Death of Alfred, to the Norman Conquest.

ENGLAND, from the death of Alfred, to the danish conquest, affords few objects to arrest the attention; little progress was made in letters, or politeness, and the constitution continued nearly the same.

CHAP.

V.

Canute, king of Denmark, a prince both active and brave, and at the head of a numerous army, invaded England, and soon reduced it under subjection: the native english were treated like slaves; infomuch, that the historians of these times acknowledge, that when an englishman met a dane, he was obliged to stop till the latter passed by. The race of Canute failing, the english shook off the danish yoke, and conferred the crown on Edward, a descendent from the ancient Angli-Saxon kings, who was called the Confessor. This revolution was effected without bloodshed, and the mild and equitable government of Edward, soon reconciled the danes, no less than the english, to his sway; but the english, in vain, flattered themselves, that they were for ever delivered from foreigners; a short time convinced them that the evil was rather suspended, than removed.

A. D.

1017.

CHAP. Edward had been educated in Normandy,
 V. and having contracted many intimacies with the
 natives of that country, as well as an affection
 to their manners, the court of England was
 soon filled with normans, who were distinguished
 by the royal favour, and had great influence in
 the national council. He had also, it appears,
 though married to a beautiful woman, made an
 indiscreet vow never to cohabit with her, which
 rendered his bed sterile; but, obtained from
 the monks, the title of Saint, or Confessor;
 and he had given his kinsman, William duke
 of Normandy, hopes of succeeding to the eng-
 lish crown. What use that enterprising prince
 made of this promise, real, or pretended, we
 shall afterwards have occasion to see.

A. D. Edward died without appointing a successor.
 1066. Harold, who succeeded him, was not of his fa-
 mily; but came to the throne, by the most
 incontestible of all rights, the suffrages of the
 people.

The first danger he experienced was from
 abroad. Hallagar, king of Norway, invaded
 England, with a fleet of three hundred sail.
 Harold was no sooner informed of this disaster,
 than he hastened to the North; anxious for the
 safety of his people, and ambitious to shew him-
 self worthy of that crown, which had been con-
 ferred on him by his countrymen.

The

The english flocked from all quarters to his standard, so that when he reached the enemy, he found himself in condition to give them battle. The action was long and bloody, but terminated in the total defeat of the danes.

CHAP.
V.

Harold, however, had scarce time to rejoice on account of his victory, before he received intelligence, that the duke of Normandy was landed, with a numerous army, in the South, and determined to dispute his crown.

The norman prince founded his claim on a pretended will of Edward the Confessor, in his favour; and also on an oath extorted from Harold, when shipwrecked on the coast of France, that he would never aspire to the succession, and by which he bound himself to support the pretensions of William.

The will Harold knew to be without foundation, and the oath he entirely disregarded, as it had been drawn from him by the fear of violence; he, therefore, replied to the norman ambassadors, who summoned him to resign the kingdom, that he was determined strenuously to maintain those national liberties with which he had been entrusted; and that the same moment should put a period to his life and government.

The answer was what William expected; he was therefore prepared for it; he knew the valour of Harold, and the power of the english nation;

CHAP. nation ; but he consulted only his ambition and
 V.
 { his courage.

A. D. Both armies met at Hastings ; the Normans
 1066. were much superior in numbers, as well as
 discipline : the battle lasted twelve hours, when
 Harold was shot in the brain by an arrow, while
 bravely combating at the head of his troops ;
 and the english, dispirited by the death of their
 leader, gave way on all sides, and were pursued
 with great slaughter by the victorious normans.
 Thus was gained by William, afterwards sur-
 named the Conqueror, the famous battle of Hast-
 ings, which terminated the saxon monarchy in
 England ; and which, by the heroic feats of va-
 lour displayed on both sides, seemed worthy to
 decide the fate of so mighty a kingdom.

C H A P. VI.

France, in the Time of Hugh Capet.

WHILE England changed its masters, France CHAP.
VI. also had changed its reigning family; and was become, like Germany, a government entirely feudal. Each province had its hereditary counts or dukes; the kingdom was a monstrous assemblage of members, without any compact body.

In the death of Lewis V. the Carlovingian race of kings ended; the right of succession belonged to Charles duke of Lorrain, uncle to Lewis; but the condition of vassal of the empire, appeared to the French nobility as a sufficient reason for excluding him. Of the princes or nobles, who held immediately of the crown, Hugh Capet was not the least powerful; he possessed the dukedom of France, which extended as far as Touraine; he was also count of Paris; he, therefore, seized the crown on the death of Lewis. An extreme devotion, real or apparent, recommended him to the people; he was acknowledged in an assembly of nobles; and the farther to establish his throne, he associated his son Robert in the government of his kingdom.

Nothing

CHAP. VI. Nothing remarkable happened during Hugh's reign, who conducted all things with great prudence and moderation; and had the singular honour of establishing a new family on the throne, with few circumstances of violence, and without shedding blood. He died in the 57th year of his age, and the eighth of his reign, and was succeeded by his son Robert, a prince of a less vigorous, though not of a less amiable character. The most remarkable circumstance in the reign of Robert, is his excommunication by the pope. This prince had espoused Bertha, his cousin, in the fourth degree; a marriage in itself lawful: the church of Rome had the boldness to impose a seven years penance on the king, ordered him to quit his wife, and threatened him with excommunication, in case of refusal. This appears an incredible stretch of audacity; but the ignorance and superstition of those times might have suffered it. Gregory V. who fulminated forth this excommunication, was by birth a german, and under the influence of Otho III. who was no friend to Robert; therefore, we may suppose, reasons of state had as great a share in this scandalous proceeding, as bigotry and fanaticism.

Historians tell us, that this excommunication had such an effect in France, that the king was abandoned by all his subjects, two servants only staying

staying with him ; and these threw into the fire CHAP.
VI.
all the victuals he left at his meals ; so fearful
were they of what had been touched by an ex-
communicated person ; but the king giving way
to superstitious terrors, or afraid of civil com-
motions, at last repudiated his wife Bertha, and
married Constance, daughter to the count Arles,
in whom he found a tyrant, instead of an ami-
able consort.

Robert died soon after this transaction, leaving A. D.
1026.
two sons, Henry and Robert. Henry was 27
years of age at his succession to the throne, and
with all the spirit of a young man, he had the
sagacity and prudence of one more advanced in
years ; without which the crown would have
been shaken from his head.

His mother Constance, who hated him, and
was ambitious to govern, had drawn over to her
party a great many lords and bishops, under
pretence of supporting the cause of her younger
son Robert : the king, therefore, after some in-
effectual struggles, was obliged to take refuge
in Normandy, where he was received with all
possible respect by duke Robert, who assured
him, that all his forces were at his disposal ;
nor were these mere expressions of civility ; an
army of normans entered France on one side,
while the king and royal party invaded it on
the other ; the queen dowager and her faction
were

CHAP. were humbled, and Henry recovered his king-
VI. dom.

Henry died in 1060, and was succeeded by his son Philip I. who was only eight years of age at the time of his succession.

C H A P. VII.

*Spain, and the Empire of Constantinople, during the
Ninth and Tenth Centuries.*

SPAIN was afflicted with misfortunes and re-
volutions of another kind; the Goths, who had
usurped this kingdom, were expelled from
hence about the eighth century, by the Mussul-
mans, or moors of Africa. The Spanish Chris-
tians retired to the mountains of Asturias, and
increased considerably under Alphonso, surnamed
the Great. The moors possessed more than three
fourths of Spain, and the most fertile provinces;
among them, as in other nations of Europe, a
crowd of too powerful nobles affected independ-
ency, and the sovereign was obliged to contend
with his subjects for dominion.

CHAP.
VII.

This was the time to have crushed the ma-
hometan power; but the christians were not
more united than their enemies; though conti-
nually at war with the moors, they were always
sacrificing each other. The reign of Alphonso
the Great, was full of conspiracies and re-
volts; his own wife, and his two sons, were
among the number of the rebels; he re-
signed his crown to his eldest son, and even
generously fought under his command. He
died

A. D.
912.

CHAP. died with the glory of a hero, and the piety of
 VII. a saint. Ramiro, another spanish hero, gained

A. D. the celebrated victory of Simancas, where the
 938. moors are said to have lost four score thousand
 men. About the beginning of the eleventh cen-
 tury, the race of moorish kings being extinct,
 the kingdom of Cardovo was dismembered by
 the ambition of a number of noblemen, who all
 usurped the title of king.

Toledo, Valentia, Seville, Saragossa, and al-
 most all the great cities had their independent
 kings. The christian provinces were changed
 into kingdoms in the same manner: they had
 a king of Navarre, of Castile, and Arragon. Per-
 petual jealousies, with all the crimes that attend
 them, were the consequence of these divisions;
 treachery, poisonings, assassinations, the common
 weapons of petty neighbouring and rival princes,
 who have much ambition, and small means of
 gratifying it. Hence, the history of Spain be-
 comes less important in proportion to the en-
 crease of the kingdoms.

C H A P. VIII.

The Empire of Constantinople.

WHILE the empire of Charlemagne was thus CHAP.
VIII.
 dismembered, and the inundations of the saracens and normans laid waste the whole western empire, that of Constantinople (to borrow a simile from a well known author) “ still subsisted,
 “ like a large tree, vigorous, though old, stript A. D.
 “ of some of its roots, and buffeted on every 801.
 “ side by storms and tempests.”

This empire had been despoiled of Syria, and a part of Asia Minor; and, while the frontiers were continually suffering encroachments and devastations, its capital was the theatre of revolutions and crimes: the emperor Maurice, and his five sons, massacred; Phocas murdered; Constantine poisoned, by the empress Martina, who had her tongue pulled out, whilst the nose of her son was cut off before her face; Constans knocked in the head, in the bath, by his own servants; Constantine Pogonatus putting out the eyes of his two brothers. In this manner was the empire governed, during the space of two hundred years.

Yet the Greeks were still the most learned and polished people in Europe, and Constantinople
the

CHAP. the largest and most beautiful city, and the only
VIII. one where the ancients manners remained.

Thus we rapidly traverse the wilds of history, where the objects are confused, rude, and uninteresting; but these first stages are necessary, in order to arrive at more cultivated fields.

C H A P. IX.

*The German Empire, and the Italian States, to the
Death of Henry V.*

HENRY II. dying without issue, great disputes ensued about the nomination of a successor. CHAP.
IX.
The princes and states assembled, elected Conrad, duke of Franconia. The lombards revolting, soon after the election of the new emperor, Conrad marched into Italy, and reduced the rebels by force of arms; he went to Rome, and was consecrated by pope John the XXth. But his stay at Rome was very short; scarce was the coronation over, when he was obliged to return into Germany, on account of some insurrections raised in his absence; but they were suppressed by the valour of Conrad, who died soon after, leaving A. D.
1039. behind him the reputation of a just, generous, and magnanimous prince. Henry III. was elected, in consequence of his father's recommendation; the first years of his reign were signalized by successful wars against Bohemia, Poland, and Hungary; Rome and Italy, as usual, were involved in confusion, and distracted by faction.

Henry deposed pope Gregory VI. as he was not consulted at the election, and filled the papal chair with his own chancellor, who assumed the name of Clement II.

CHAP. About the same time, the emperor caused his
 IX. infant son, afterwards the famous Henry IV.
 A. D. to be elected king of the Romans; a title still
 1054. used for the acknowledged heir of the empire.

Henry IV. surnamed the Great, was only five years old at his father's death; he was immediately acknowledged emperor, and the care of his education was committed to his mother Agnes; she was a woman of spirit and address, and discharged both her public and private trust with diligence and capacity.

About this time, a number of norman adventurers landed in Apulia and Calabria, drove out the saracens, and made themselves masters of the country; Sicily soon after submitted to their arms. The pope, wanting a support against the emperors, made protectors and vassals of these people; the normans readily did homage for their lands, and agreed to hold them of the church. Hence the pope's claim of superiority over the kingdom of Naples and Sicily.

Henry IV. assumed the reins of government at the age of twenty-two, and began his administration with restraining the thefts, robberies, and extortions, which his subjects of the duchy of Saxony exercised upon strangers, as well as upon each other; but the saxon princes and nobles, who were gainers by these abuses, particularly by the infamous practice of imprisoning travellers, and making them pay for their ransom, opposed the
 intended

intended reformation, and entered into an association against the emperor, under pretence that their liberties were endangered. CHAP. IX.

In this rebellious disposition they were encouraged by the arrogance of pope Alexander II. who, at the instigation of Hildebrand, afterwards the famous Gregory VII. summoned Henry to appear before the tribunal of the holy see, on account of his loose life, and to answer the charge of having exposed the investiture of bishops to sale.

Henry, who was at war with the Saxons, treated the pope's mandate with the contempt it deserved; he carried on the war against the enemy with vigour, totally routed them in a bloody engagement, and made himself master of all Saxony. The heads of the rebellion asked pardon, and begged to be restored to favour; he generously accepted their submission, and peace was restored to Germany. But Henry was not suffered long to enjoy the fruits of his valour; a new storm threatened him from Italy, which afterwards fell with violence on his head, and shook all the thrones in Christendom. On the death of Alexander II. Hildebrand had been elected pope, under the name of Gregory VII. and though he had not asked the emperor's voice, he prudently waited for his confirmation, before he assumed the tiara. He obtained it by this mark of submission. Henry confirmed his election,

A. D.
1075.

CHAP. and Gregory having nothing further to fear, took
 IX. { off the mask. He began his pontificate with excommunicating every ecclesiastic who should receive a benefice from a layman, and every layman by whom such benefice should be conferred. This was engaging the church in an open quarrel with the sovereigns of all nations; but the thunder of the holy see was more particularly directed against the emperor; and as this dispute, and its consequences merit attention, we shall be more circumstantial than usual.

The predecessors of Henry IV. had always enjoyed the right of nominating bishops and abbots; this right they had in common with almost all princes. Gregory, however, sent two legates to summon Henry before him, as a delinquent, because he still continued to bestow investitures, notwithstanding the apostolic decree to the contrary; adding, that if he should fail to yield obedience to the church, he must expect to be excommunicated and dethroned. Incensed at this arrogant message, Henry dismissed the legates with contempt, and convoked a council at Worms, consisting of bishops, abbots, and doctors, in which he deposed the pope.

In consequence of which, Henry sent an ambassador to Rome, with a formal deprivation of Gregory, who in his turn convoked a council, at which were present an hundred and ten bishops, who unanimously agreed, that the pope had just
 cause

cause to depose Henry; to dissolve the oath of allegiance which princes and states had taken in his favour; and to prohibit them from holding any correspondence with him, on pain of excommunication; which was immediately fulminated against the emperor and his adherents.—“ In the name of Almighty God, and by our authority, I prohibit Henry, the son of our emperor Henry, from governing the Germanic kingdom and Italy; I release all christians from their oath of allegiance to him, and strictly forbid all persons from serving or attending him as king.” This is the first instance of a pope pretending to deprive a sovereign of his crown; the circular letters written by this pontiff breathe the same spirit with this sentence of deposition; he there repeats several times, that bishops are superior to kings, and made to judge them; expressions alike artful and presumptuous, and calculated for bringing in all the churchmen of the world to his standard.

Gregory knew very well that the german bishops would come over immediately to his party, and draw along with them many of the nobles, ever jealous of the imperial power; the flames of civil war still lay smothering, and a bull, properly directed, was sufficient to set it in a blaze.

The saxons, Henry's old enemies, made use of the papal displeasure, as a pretence for rebelling against him; nay, those very princes and

CHAP. prelates who had assisted in deposing of Gregory,
 IX. gave up their monarch to be tried by the pope;
 and his holiness was solicited to come to Augs-
 burg for that purpose.

A. D. Willing to prevent this odious trial at Augs-
 1077. burg, Henry took an unaccountable resolution.
 He suddenly passed the Alps, with a few domestics,
 to ask absolution of the pope, his oppressor, who
 was then in the fortress of Canosa, on the Appenine
 mountains, with the countess Matilda: at the gates of
 this palace, the emperor presented himself as an humble
 penitent; they stopped him in the inner court, stripped
 him of his cloaths, and put on him sackcloth. In this
 condition, and bare-foot, he was obliged to remain in
 the court three days, though it was then in the month
 of January, before he was permitted to kiss the feet
 of his holiness, who at that time was shut up with
 the Countess Matilda, whose spiritual director he
 had long been, and some say her gallant; but be that
 as it may, her attachment to Gregory was so great,
 that she made over all her estates to the apostolic
 see; and this donation is the true cause of all the
 wars which, since that period, have raged between
 the emperors and popes.

The emperor was at length permitted to throw
 himself at the pontiff's feet, who condescended to
 grant him absolution; but not till he had sworn
 obedience to him in all things, and promised to
 submit to his solemn decision at Augsberg; so
 that

that Henry got nothing but disgrace by his journey, while Gregory, elated by his triumph, and now looking upon himself (not altogether without reason) as the lord and master of all the crowned heads in Christendom, said in several of his letters, that it was his duty to pull down the pride of kings.

CHAP.
IX.

This extraordinary accommodation of Henry's, gave much disgust to the princes of Italy, who were on the point of deserting him; but happily for the emperor, their detestation for the pope's arrogance, overbalanced their indignation for his meanness. Henry took advantage of this temper, and by a change of fortune hitherto unknown to the german emperors, he found a strong party in Italy, when he was abandoned in Germany; all Lombardy took up arms against the pope, while he was raising all Germany against the emperor.

Gregory, on one hand, made use of every art to get another emperor elected in Germany, and Henry left nothing undone to persuade the italians to choose another pope. The germans chose Rodolph, duke of Suabia; upon which Gregory wrote word, that he would determine between Henry and Rodolph, and give the crown to him who would shew most submission to his authority. Henry, however, trusted more to the valour of his troops, than to the decision of the holy father. He set out immediately for Germany,

CHAP. IX. where he defeated his enemies in several engagements; and Gregory seeing no hopes of submission, thundered out a second excommunication against him, confirming, at the same time, the election of Rodolph, to whom he sent a golden crown, on which the following verse, equally haughty and puerile, was engraved :

Petra dedit Petro—Petrus diadema, Rodolpho.

In order to avoid the effects of this second excommunication, Henry took a step worthy of himself; he assembled at Brixon, about twenty german bishops, who acting also for the prelates of Lombardy, unanimously resolved, that Gregory the VIIth, having rendered himself unworthy of the papal chair, by his misconduct and rebellion, he ought to be deposed from a dignity he so little deserved. They accordingly degraded Hildebrand, and elected, in his room, Guebart, archbishop of Ravenna, a person of undoubted merit, who took the name of Clement III. Henry was obliged, in the mean time, to employ all his forces against his rival, Rodolph, who was defeated, and afterwards slain by the famous Godfrey, of Bouillon, then in the service of Henry, and the same who made the conquest of Jerusalem.

Thus delivered from his formidable antagonist, Henry soon dispersed the rest of his enemies in
Germany,

Germany, and set out for Italy, in order to settle
 Clement in the papal chair; but the gates of
 Rome being shut, he was obliged to attack it in
 form; the siege continued upwards of two years,
 and was at length taken by assault; but Gre-
 gory was not taken in it; he retired into the
 Castle of St. Angelo, and from thence defied and
 excommunicated the conqueror.

CHAP.
IX.

A. D.
1084.

While the siege was going on, and the empe-
 ror called about some affairs into Lombardy,
 Gregory was released, and died soon after at Sa-
 lerno.

The death of Gregory, however, did not ex-
 tinguish the flame which his ambition had
 raised. The romans, not satisfied with Clement,
 the emperor's pope, elected Urban II. who se-
 duced the emperor's son, Conrad, into a rebellion
 against his father, and after the death of this unna-
 tural son, his brother, who was afterwards Henry V.
 made war against his father, and having betrayed
 him into his power, shut him up in Mentz;
 whither two legates came from the pope to depose
 him, and two deputies sent from the diet, by his
 son, divested him of the imperial robes; while
 they were thus employed, he exclaimed, "Great
 " God!" the tears trickling down his venerable
 cheeks, "thou art the God of vengeance, and
 " will repay this outrage:" he died soon after at
 Liege, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and
 forty-ninth of his reign,

A. D.
1106.

He

CHAP. IX. He was a prince of great courage, and excellent endowments of body and mind; there was an air of dignity in his appearance, that spoke the greatness of his soul; he possessed a natural fund of eloquence and vivacity; was of a mild and merciful temper, extremely charitable, and an admirable pattern of piety and resignation.

Henry V. who had dethroned his father, and afterwards dug him out of his grave, as an excommunicated person, maintained the same prerogatives as his father against the church, as soon as he came in possession of the empire. In order to terminate this old contest, Henry invited the pope into Germany; but Pascal, who succeeded Gregory, being well acquainted with the emperor's implacable disposition, thought proper to take a different route, and put himself under the protection of Philip I. king of France, who undertook to mediate an accommodation between the empire and the holy see; a conference was accordingly held at Chalons, but without effect.

Upon this, Henry passed the Alps with a powerful army; and Rome, once more, was drenched in blood; treaties, perjuries, excommunications, and murders, followed each other in rapid succession; at length, Henry V. after having created, deposed, banished, and recalled several popes; and having been as often excommunicated as his father, was obliged to put an
end

end to the contest, and give up the point of investitures : thus finished this bloody and ridiculous war!

CHAP.
IX.

Henry died at Utrecht soon after his accommodation with Rome ; he was a wise, politic, and resolute prince ; and exclusive of his unnatural behaviour to his father, was worthy of the imperial throne.

C H A P. X.

England, from the Battle of Hastings, to the Death of Henry I.

CHAP.
X.

NOTHING could exceed the consternation of the english, when informed of the unfortunate battle of Hastings, the death of their king, and the slaughter of their principal nobility; and, that they might not have leisure to recover themselves, William immediately put himself in motion, firmly resolved to terminate an enterprize, which celerity and vigour could only render finally successful. He advanced, by quick marches, towards London, where the magistrates of the city came out to meet him, and made him the tender of a crown, which they were not in a condition to refuse to a conqueror,

William, thus possessed of the throne, knew equally well how to govern as to conquer, and signalized his reign by extinguishing rebellions, frustrating invasions, and enacting and severely executing rigorous laws. The antient britons, the danes, and anglo-saxons, lay now all confounded, in the same state of slavery; his normans, who had assisted him in his conquest, were rewarded by him with the lands of the conquered. Hence came that multiplicity of
norman

norman families, whose descendants, or, at least, their names, still subsist in England. CHAP.
X.
}

William abolished all the ancient laws of the country, to make way for those of Normandy; he moreover ordered, that all pleadings should be in the norman language. This monarch's death was occasioned by a quarrel not altogether worthy of his life; a witticism gave rise to a war. William, who was become corpulent, had been detained in bed sometime by sickness, which gave Philip I. of France, occasion to say, that he was surpris'd that his brother of England should be so long in being delivered of his belly. William sent him word, that, as soon as he was up, he would, at his churching, present such a number of tapers, as would set the kingdom of France in a flame. Accordingly, on his recovery, he led an army into France, and laid every thing waste with fire and sword; but the progress of these hostilities was stopt by an accident, which put an end to the conqueror's life. His horse suddenly starting aside, he bruised his belly on the pommel of the saddle, which brought on a mortification, of which he died, in the sixty-third year of his age. He left Normandy and Mayne to his eldest son, Robert. He wrote to the archbishop of Canterbury, desiring to crown William, his second son, king of England; and he bequeathed to Henry, the youngest of the three, his mother's jointure. William II. sur-named,

A. D.
1087.

CHAP. named Rufus, or the red, from the colour of his
 X. hair, was instantly crowned king of England;
 and Robert took peaceable possession of Normandy; but this partition of the empire, by the late king, occasioned many disputes in England, which seemed to promise a sudden revolution.

The norman barons, who generally possessed large estates, both in England and in their own country, were uneasy at the separation of those territories; and foreseeing that it would be impossible for them to preserve long their allegiance to two masters, they eagerly desired an union as before, and looked upon Robert as the proper owner of the whole.

A comparison between the personal qualities of the two princes, also led the malcontents to prefer the elder. Robert was brave, open, sincere, and generous; whereas William, though not less brave than his brother, was violent, haughty, and tyrannical, and seemed disposed to govern more by fear than the love of his people; a powerful conspiracy was therefore carried on against William: and Odo, the late king's brother, undertook to conduct it to maturity.

William, sensible of the danger that threatened him, endeavoured to gain the affections of the native english, whom he prevailed on by promises of future good behaviour, to espouse his interests; but, after he had subdued the rebels, he paid no regard to his promises, and showed
 the

the first instance of his perverse inclinations, in his ingratitude to the english, who had seated him on the throne. CHAP.
X.

But the memory of these transient broils, and unsuccessful treasons, was quite sunk in the tumults of the crusades, which then engrossed the attention of Europe, and have since employed the curiosity of mankind, as the most singular monument of human folly that ever appeared on the face of our globe.

Robert, duke of Normandy, impelled by the bravery and mistaken generosity of his spirit, had early enlisted himself in the first crusade; and being always unprovided with money, he found it would be impossible for him, without some supply, to appear in a manner suitable to his rank.

He therefore resolved to sell his dominions; and he offered them to his brother William, for so small a sum as ten thousand marks. The bargain was concluded, and William was put in possession of Normandy and Mayne; while Robert, providing himself with a magnificent train, set out for the holy land in pursuit of glory, and in full hopes of securing his eternal salvation.

The fanaticisms of the times afforded the king of England another opportunity of increasing his dominions. Poitiers and Guichne were offered to be mortgaged to him, for the same pious purpose
that

CHAP. that had induced Robert to part with Normandy
 X. and Mayne.

The bargain was concluded, and William had prepared a fleet and army to take possession of his new territories, when an accident put an end to his life. He was engaged on a hunting party in New Forest, accompanied by Sir Walter Tyrell, a French gentleman, remarkable for his address in archery, and as William had dis-
 A. D. mounted, after a chase, Tyrell, impatient to
 1100. shew his dexterity, let fly an arrow at a stag, which suddenly started before him; the arrow glancing against a tree, struck the king in the heart, and instantly slew him.

William appears to have been a violent and tyrannical prince, a perfidious, encroaching, and dangerous neighbour, and an unkind and ungenerous relation. As he never was married, the succession, of course, devolved upon Robert, his elder brother; but he was then too distant to assert his claims.

In the mean time Henry, who had been hunting in the New Forest, when his brother was slain, immediately galloped to Winchester, secured the royal treasure, was saluted king, and proceeded to the exercise of sovereign power; but the policy and prudence of Henry ran great hazard of being frustrated, by the sudden appearance of his brother Robert, who returned from the holy land, about a month after the death
 of

of William, took possession of Normandy without resistance, and made preparations for asserting his title to England. CHAP.
X.

The great reputation which Robert had acquired in the east, forwarded his pretensions ; and the Norman barons, still impressed with the consequences of the separation of the duchy and the kingdom, discovered the same discontent which had appeared on the accession of Rufus.

Henry, therefore, with great difficulty, raised an army to oppose Robert, who had landed at Portsmouth. The two armies continued some days in sight of each other, without coming to action ; and by the interposition of archbishop Anselm, an accommodation was brought about between the two brothers. In this treaty it was agreed, that Robert should resign his pretensions to England, and receive an annual pension of three thousand marks ; and that if either of the princes should die without issue, the other should succeed to his dominions ; but these conditions, though so favourable to Henry, were soon violated by his rapacity and ambition. The affairs of Normandy falling into confusion, Henry went over, by invitation, to regulate them ; but instead of supporting his brother's authority, he increased the discontents by every under-hand art, and at length made himself master of the duchy. The unfortunate Robert, who seemed only to be the sport of fortune, was carried prisoner to England,

E

where

CHAP. where he remained in custody during the re-
 { X. mainder of his life.

But Henry's public prosperity was much over-
 balanced by a domestic misfortune : his son Wil-
 liam, who had attained his eighteenth year, pe-
 rished at sea, on his return from Normandy, with
 all his retinue. The father was so much affected
 by the news, that he is said never to have smiled
 more.

Henry had not any legitimate children, except
 his daughter Matilda, who becoming a widow
 by the death of the emperor Henry V. he mar-
 ried her to Geoffrey Plantagenet, eldest son of
 the count of Anjou. She was soon after deli-
 vered of a son, who received the name of Henry.
 A. D. The joy of this event, and the pleasure of his
 1135. daughter's company, made Henry take up his
 residence in Normandy, where he died in the
 67th year of his age, and 35th of his reign,
 leaving his daughter Matilda heiress of his do-
 minions. He was one of the most accomplished
 princes that ever filled the English throne ; pos-
 sessing all the qualities which could fit him for
 the government of an extensive territory. He
 granted the city of London a charter and privi-
 leges ; and from this first concession, we may
 date the origin of English liberty, such as we find
 it at this day. .

C H A P. XI.

France, under Philip I. and Lewis VI. with an Account of the first Crusade.

THE reign of Philip I. is not so remarkable for any thing as his marrying Bértrand de Montford, duchess of Anjou, while her husband and his queen were both alive; for which he was excommunicated by Urban I. in the famous council of Clermont, where the first crusade was preached for the recovery of the holy land; a circumstance which naturally leads to speak of that extravagant expedition, its causes, and consequences.

CHAP.
XI.

Gregory VII. amongst his other vast ideas, had formed the project of uniting the western christians against the mahometans, and recovering Palestine from the hands of infidels; and his quarrel with Henry IV. only could have obstructed the progress of this undertaking; the work, however, was reserved for a meaner instrument; for a man whose condition would excite no jealousy, and whose head was weak as his imagination was warm. But before we mention this man, it will be necessary to say a few words of the state of the east at that time, and of the passion for pilgrimages which then prevailed in Europe.

We naturally view with veneration and delight, those places which have been the residence

CHAP. of any illustrious personage; or the scene of any
XI. great transaction. Hence the enthusiasm and superstitious devotion with which the christians, from the earliest ages of the church, were accustomed to visit that country, where their religion had taken its rise; and that city, where the messiah had died for the redemption of those who believe in his name; but the christians, in their pious journeys, had the mortification to see the holy sepulchre, and the other places made sacred by the presence of the saviour, fallen into the hands of infidels; and the pilgrims, who resorted to them, exposed to outrages of every kind from those fierce barbarians. Every person who returned from Palestine, related the dangers which he had encountered in visiting the holy city, and described, with exaggeration, the cruelty and vexations of the turks.

While the minds of men were thus roused, a fanatical monk, commonly known by the name of Peter the Hermit, a native of Amiens, in Picardy, revived the project of Gregory VII. of leading all the forces of christendom against the infidels, and driving them out of the holy land.

He made the pilgrimage of Jerusalem, and was so deeply affected with the danger to which that act of piety exposed christians, that he ran from province to province, on his return, with a crucifix in his hand, exciting princes and people to this holy war.

Urban

Urban II. entered into Peter's views, and summoned a council at Clermont, in Auvergne, where the greatest prelates, nobles, and princes attended; and when the pope and the hermit had concluded their pathetic exhortations, the whole assembly, as if impelled by immediate holy inspiration, exclaimed with one voice, "it is the will of God!" words which were deemed so memorable, and believed to be so much the result of divine influence, that they were employed as the motto on the sacred standard, and as the signal of rendezvous and battle in all future exploits of the champions of the cross; the symbol chosen by the devoted combatants, as the badge of union, and affixed to their right shoulder, whence their expedition got the name of a crusade.

CHAP.
XI.
}

Persons of all ranks flew to arms with the utmost ardor; the number of adventurers soon became so great, that their more experienced leaders, Hugh count of Vermandois, brother to the French king, Robert duke of Normandy, Raymond count Thoulouse, and Godfrey of Bouillon, became apprehensive lest the greatness of the armament should defeat its purpose; so that they permitted an undisciplined multitude, computed at three hundred thousand men, to go before them, under the command of Peter the Hermit, Walter the Moneyless, and other wild fanatics.

CHAP.
XI.

Peter and his army, before which he walked with sandals on his feet, and a rope about his waste, took the road to Constantinople, through Hungary and Bulgaria. Trusting that heaven, by supernatural means, would supply all their necessities, they made no provision for subsistence on their march; but they soon found themselves obliged to obtain by plunder, what they had vainly expected from miracles; want is ingenious in suggesting pretences for its supply: their fury first discharged itself on the jews;—as the soldiers of Jesus Christ, they thought themselves authorized to take revenge upon his murderers; and accordingly fell upon these unhappy people, and put them to the sword without mercy; seizing their effects as lawful prize. In Bavaria alone, twelve thousand jews were massacred, and many thousands in the other provinces of Germany; but jews not being every where to be found, these pious robbers, who had tasted the sweets of plunder, pillaged without distinction, till the inhabitants of the countries through which they passed, rose, and cut them almost all off.

The Hermit, however, and the remnant of his army, consisting of twenty thousand starving wretches, at length reached Constantinople, where they were guilty of the greatest disorders, pillaging even the churches.

The

The Greek emperor, wishing to get rid of such troublesome guests, furnished them with vessels to transport themselves to the other side of the Bosphorus; and general Peter saw himself in the plains of Asia, at the head of a christian army, ready to give battle to the infidels. Soliman, sultan of Nice, fell upon the disorderly crowd, and slaughtered them without mercy,

CHAP.
XI.
}

In the mean time the more disciplined armies arrived on the plains of Asia, and advanced to the siege of Jerusalem, the great object of their armament, and the acquisition of which they considered as the consummation of their labours. These pious adventurers, from the incredible number of seven hundred thousand, were reduced to twenty thousand on their arrival at the holy city, which they took by assault, after a siege of five weeks, and put the garrison and inhabitants to the sword, without distinction. Arms protected not the brave, nor submission the timid; no age nor sex were spared; infants perished by the same sword that pierced their mothers.

A. D.
1099.

The streets of Jerusalem were covered with heaps of slain; and the shrieks of agony and despair still resounded from every house, when these triumphant warriors, glutted with slaughter, threw aside their arms, yet streaming with blood, and advanced with naked feet and bended knees to the sepulchre of the Prince of Peace; sung

CHAP. anthems to that redeemer, who had purchased
XI. their salvation by his death, and while dead, to
 the calamities of their fellow-creatures, dissolved
 in tears for the suffering of the Messiah. So inconsistent is human nature with itself, and so easily does the most effeminate superstition associate both with the most heroic courage, and with the fiercest barbarity.

About the same time that this great event happened in Asia, Lewis VI. who succeeded his father Philip, was employed in humbling the nobility, who, more and more affecting independency, insulted him every hour, plundered his subjects, and entirely cut off the communication between Paris and Orleans, Lewis demolished their castles, and compelled them to make restitution to such as they had pillaged; all which he performed in a manner so disinterested, and with so indisputable a zeal for the public welfare, that he gained the affections of the virtuous part of the nobility, and the reverence of the people; while he restored order to the state, and preserved the monarchy from subversion.

A. D. He died at Paris in the 60th year of his age,
1137. and the 30th of his reign.

C H A P. XII.

The German Empire and Italy, from the Death of Henry V. to the Election of Frederick I. surnamed Barbarossa.

AS Henry V. left no issue, the empire, being CHAP.
XII. still elective, was conferred by the votes of the electors, on a prince of the house of Saxony, named Lothario II. The new emperor marched A. D.
1125. into Italy, where ecclesiastical affairs, as usual, were in much disorder. Peter of Leon, grandson of a wealthy jew was elected pope by a faction, and Innocent II. by another. Peter kept possession of Rome by means of his army, whilst his rival was obliged to retire to France, the common asylum of distressed popes. Lothario espoused the cause of Innocent, with whom he had an interview at Liege, accompanied him to Rome at the head of an army, and established him in the papal chair,

On his way to Germany, Lothario was seized A. D.
1137. with a dangerous distemper, which carried him off near Trent, in the 12th year of his reign. Conrad, duke of Franconia, nephew to Henry V. was unanimously elected emperor on the death of Lothario; but the imperial throne was disputed by Henry, duke of Bavaria, the name of whose

CHAP. whose family was Guelph; hence those who
 { XII. espouse his party was called Guelphs, an appellation afterwards bestowed on the enemies of the emperors. In this contest, the imperial army was commanded by Frederick duke of Suabia, the emperor's brother, who being born at the village Hieghibelin, gave to the soldier the name of Ghebelins, an epithet by which the imperial party was distinguished in Italy, while the popes adherents grew famous under the Guelphs.

Guelph, and his principal followers were besieged in the castle of Weinsburg; and having sustained great loss in a sally, they were obliged to surrender at discretion.

While these things were transacting in Germany, new disorders broke out in Italy. The people of Rome formed a design of re-establishing the commonwealth, of retrieving the sovereignty of that city, and abolishing the temporal dominion of the popes. Lucius II. marched against the rebels, and was killed at the foot of the capitol; but Eugenius III. found means to reduce them to reason, and preserve the authority of the apostolic see.

This pope afterwards countenanced the second crusade against the saracens; in which the emperor and the king of France engaged, as we shall immediately relate. Conrad died soon after

after his return from the East, and his nephew, Frederick, surnamed Barbarossa, duke of Suabia, was raised to the imperial throne, by the unanimous voices of the princes of Italy and Germany.

CHAP.
XII.
}

C H A P. XIII.

France under Lewis VII. and the second Crusade.

CHAP. **L**EWIS VII. was no sooner fixed on the throne
 XIII. of France, than he found himself engaged in
 one of those civil wars which the feudal govern-
 A. D. ment rendered unavoidable; and having, in an
 1140. expedition into Champagne, made himself master
 of Vitry, he caused the church to be set on fire,
 by which means thirteen hundred persons, who
 had taken refuge there, perished in the flames.
 This cruel action made a deep impression on the
 king's mind, and prepared the way for a second
 crusade.

The christians of the east grew weaker every
 day in those countries which they had con-
 quered.

Pope Eugenius III. to whom the deputies of
 the east had been sent to solicit a new armament,
 pitched upon Bernard, as the instrument of this
 pious warfare. Bernard was learned for those
 times; naturally eloquent, and irreproachable in
 his morals; he, therefore, soon found means to
 persuade the king of France that there was no
 other method of expiating his guilt but by an
 expedition to the holy land. Queen Eleanor
 was likewise persuaded by the saint to take the
 cross; and the example of the royal pair was fol-
 lowed

lowed by all present, among whom were many of the chief nobility. From France, St. Bernard went to preach the crusade in Germany; where, by the force of his irresistible eloquence, he prevailed on the emperor, Conrad III. Frederick Barbarossa, afterwards emperor, and an infinite number of persons of all ranks, to take the cross, promising them, in the name of God, victory over the infidels.

CHAP.
XIII.

The Germans took the field first, the French followed them; and the same excesses that had been committed by the soldiers of the first crusade, were acted over again by these. After Conrad had passed the Bosphorus, he acted with that imprudence which seems inseparable from such kind of expeditions; instead of waiting for the king of France, when their numbers united would have insured success, he marched immediately into the middle of Asia, where the sultan of Iconium, a more experienced general, drew his heavy German cavalry among the rocks, and cut his army to pieces.

The king of France was not more successful in his enterprize; he fell into the same snare that deceived the emperor; but Lewis met with a domestic misfortune that gave him more uneasiness than the loss of his army. Queen Eleanor was suspected of an amour with the prince of Antioch; and Lewis, more delicate than politic, annulled his marriage with her, soon after his

CHAP. his return. Eleanor espoused his powerful vassal,
XII. Henry Plantagenet, duke of Normandy, and
presumptive heir to the crown of England; and
by this alliance, France lost the fine provinces of
Guienne and Poitou, the hereditary possession of
the queen.

C H A P. XIV.

England, from Henry I. to the Accession of Henry II.

HENRY, as you have seen, left his dominions, by will, to his daughter Matilda; but the aversion of the feudal barons against female succession, prevailed over their good faith, and prepared the way for the usurpation of Stephen, son of the count of Blois, and grandson to the conqueror. No sooner, therefore, was the king known to be dead, than Stephen hastened to London; and Hugh Bigod, steward of the household, averring, upon oath, that the late king had expressed his intentions to make Stephen his heir, the archbishop anointed him without further scruple.

CHAP.
XIV.
A. D.
1133.

Thus was Stephen made king by one of those speedy revolutions which ever mark the barbarity of a state in which they are customary.

But the usurper was not suffered to enjoy his throne in peace. Matilda landed in England, with a resolution to depose him, and recover the crown; but after a few ineffectual struggles was obliged to retire into Normandy. At length prince Henry, son to Matilda, Geoffrey Plantagenet having reached his sixteenth year, espoused the heiress of Guienne and Poitou, who had been married to Lewis VII. king of France, but whom

CHAP. he had divorced, as has been already observed, on
 XIV. account of her gallantries : this marriage, which
 brought Henry a great accession of power, rendered him extremely formidable to his rival ; and taking advantage of some discontents among the people, he invaded England. Stephen advanced with a superior army to meet him, and a decisive action was every day expected ; when the great men on both sides set about a negotiation between the contending parties, and an accommodation was at last settled, by which it was
 A. D. agreed that Stephen should possess the crown
 1154. during his life, and that Henry, on Stephen's death, should succeed him to the kingdom.

The barons all swore to the observance of this treaty, and Henry immediately returned to Normandy. Stephen's death, which happened next year, prevented those jealousies and feuds which were likely to have ensued in so delicate a situation.

CHAP. XV.

France and England, during the Reign of Henry II.

AS soon as Henry was informed of Stephen's death, he set out on his journey to England, and was received with the acclamations of all the people ; who, harrassed with supporting opposite pretensions, were now rejoiced to see all parties united. CHAP.
XV.

The first act of Henry's reign was to enlarge the privileges of the people, and render them more independent of the barons, by whom they had been long held in servitude, or in a state of the most grievous oppression.

He next cast his eyes upon the church, where abuses of every kind prevailed ; rightly judging, that if the present opportunity was neglected, and the usurpation of the clergy allowed to proceed, the crown must be in danger, from the prevailing superstition of the people, of falling under subjection to the mitre.

In order to remedy these evils, and that he might be secure against any opposition, Henry exalted Thomas à Becket, his chancellor, to the see of Canterbury, on whose compliance, he supposed, he could entirely depend ; but never prince of so much penetration, as appeared in the issue, so little understood the character of his mi-

CHAP.
XV.

nister. Becket was no sooner installed in the see of Canterbury, which rendered him the second person in the kingdom, than he secretly aspired at being the first, in consequence at least, and totally altered his conduct; but though Henry found himself thus grievously mistaken in the character of the person whom he had promoted to the primacy, he determined not to desist from his former intention of retrenching clerical usurpation; and an event soon occurred which gave him a plausible pretence for putting his design in execution, and brought things to a crisis with the archbishop.

A man in holy orders debauched the daughter of a gentleman in Worcestershire, and then murdered the father, to prevent the effects of his repentment. The general indignation against so enormous a crime made the king insist that the assassin should be delivered up to the civil magistrate.

But Becket insisted on the privileges of the church; and maintained that no greater punishment could be inflicted on him than degradation.

Henry laid hold of so favourable a cause to punish the clergy with respect to their usurpations; and to determine at once those controversies which daily multiplied between the civil and ecclesiastical jurisdiction, he summoned an assembly of all the prelates of England, and put to them this concise and decisive question:
Whether

Whether or not they were willing to submit to the ancient laws and customs of the kingdom? The bishops answered equivocally; and the king left the assembly with marks of the highest indignation: they were terrified, and gave a general promise of observing the ancient customs. A declaration in general terms was not sufficient for Henry; he wanted to define exactly the limits between the rival powers. For this purpose, he summoned, at Clarendon, a general council of the bishops and nobles, to whom he submitted that great and important question; the barons were all gained to the king's party, and the bishops were over-awed by the general combination against them.

CHAP.
XV.

The following laws, among others, commonly called the constitution of Clarendon, were voted without opposition: "That no appeals in spiritual causes should be carried to the holy see, nor any clergyman suffered to depart the kingdom, unless with the king's permission; that laymen should not be accused in spiritual courts, except by legal and reputable witnesses; and lastly, that churchmen, accused of any crime, should be tried in civil courts."

A. D.
1164.

Henry thinking he now finally prevailed in this great enterprise, sent the constitution to the pope to be ratified; but Alexander III. who plainly saw they were calculated to establish the independency of England on the holy see, abrogated,

CHAP. annulled, and rejected them; and when Becket
XV. found he might hope for a support in opposition,
he expressed the deepest sorrow for his criminal compliance.

Henry, however, convinced every one would obey his will, except the man whom he had lifted into power, resolved both to humble the churches, and make the prelate feel the weight of his indignation; but Becket, to avoid such extremities, retired beyond sea, and put himself under the protection of the pope, and the king of France. Lewis, jealous of the rising greatness of Henry, was glad of any opportunity to give him disturbance in his government. He pretended to pity extremely the condition of the exiled primate, who filled all Europe with exclamations against the violence which he suffered. At length, after a number of conferences, all difficulties between the parties were adjusted, and Becket was permitted to return, on conditions both honourable and advantageous; a certain proof how much Henry dreaded the thunder of the church.

This accommodation with Becket did not even procure the king that temporary tranquillity which he hoped from it: instead of being taught moderation, by a six years exile, the primate was only animated by a spirit of revenge. Elated by the victory which he had obtained over his sovereign, he set no bounds to his arrogance.

gance. On his arrival in England he suspended the archbishop of York, and excommunicated two bishops, because they had assisted at the coronation of prince Henry, during the absence of the primate. The degraded prelates waited upon the king in Normandy, where he then resided, and complained to him of the violent proceedings of Becket. Henry, sensible that his whole plan of operations was overturned, was thrown into the most violent agitation. “Will my servants,” exclaimed he, “still leave me exposed to the insolence of this ungrateful imperious priest?” These words seemed a call for vengeance; and four gentlemen of the king’s household, communicating their thoughts to each other, and swearing to revenge their sovereign’s quarrel, secretly withdrew from court, and made the best of their way to England. On their arrival in Canterbury, they found the archbishop in the church of St. Benedict, and murdered him while he was hearing mass. Henry was no sooner informed of the primate’s murder, than he was filled with the utmost consternation. Excommunications he foresaw would be armed with double force. However, as soon as he recovered in any degree his tone of mind, he dispatched a solemn embassy to Rome, maintaining his innocence, and offering to submit the whole affair to the decision of the holy see. The pope, flattered by so much condescension, forbore to

CHAP.
XV.A. D.
1170.

CHAP. proceed to extremities, more especially as he
 XV. was sensible that he could reap more advantage
 { from moderation than from violence.

Henry finding he was in no immediate danger from the thunder of the vatican, undertook the conquest of Ireland ; a design which he had long projected, and for which he had obtained a bull from pope Adrian IV.

A few centuries after the christian æra, when the ravages of the goths and vandals had extinguished elsewhere the means of knowledge, and involved the other nations of Europe in the thickest darkness, Ireland, like Athens of old, was resorted to by foreigners, as the only surviving repository of learning. At that period, seminaries of knowledge were erected in several parts of the kingdom ; learning was encouraged and cultivated with a zeal almost approaching to enthusiasm ; but, it is equally true, that in time they fell from these advantages ; and their degenerating posterity, at the time we are now speaking of, were wrapt in the darkest barbarity. This may be imputed to the frequent invasions of the danes, who over-ran the whole country, and every where spread their ravages, and confirmed their authority. The natives, kept in the strictest bondage, grew every day more ignorant ; and when at last they rose up on their conquerors, and totally expelled them the island, they wanted
 instructors

instructors to restore them to their former attainments. CHAP.
XV.

This island, at the time Henry invaded it, was divided into five principalities: namely, Leinster, Meath, Munster, Ulster, and Connaught; each governed by its respective monarch, who waged perpetual hostilities against each other. It is not much to be wondered at, that the king, in a progress which he made through the country, had little other occupation than to receive the homage of his new subjects. A. D.
1172.

Henry seemed now to have reached the pinnacle of human grandeur and felicity: his dangerous controversy with the church was at an end; and he appeared equally happy in his domestic situation, and his political government. But this tranquility was of short duration. Prince Henry, at the instigation of Lewis VII. his father-in-law, insisted that the king should resign to him, either the kingdom of England, or the duchy of Normandy. His two younger brothers, Geoffrey and Richard, also leagued with the court of France; and Europe saw with astonishment, the best and most indulgent of parents at war with his own family. However, these quarrels were in some measure quieted by the death of young Henry, and also his brother Geoffrey. But Philip, king of France, who succeeded his father Lewis, jealous of Henry's greatness, entered into a private confederacy with

CHAP. prince Richard, now heir to the crown of Eng-
 XV. land, and persuaded him to seek present power
 and independency at the expence of filial duty.

But the mortification which Henry received from this circumstance, was nothing in comparison of what he experienced on hearing his favourite son John had joined his brother. Overloaded with cares and sorrows, and robbed of his last domestic comfort, this unhappy father broke out into expressions of the utmost despair : he cursed the day of his birth, and bestowed on his ungrateful children a malediction, which he could never be brought to retract : and this fatal discovery having quite broke his spirit, threw him into a fever, of which he soon after expired, at the castle of Chinon, in Normandy.

A. D.
 1189.

Henry possessed every accomplishment, both of body and mind, which can make a man either estimable or amiable. He left only two legitimate sons, Richard, who succeeded him, and John commonly denominated Lackland, because he inherited no territory,

C H A P. XVI.

*The German Empire, and Italy, under Frederick,
surnamed Barbarossa.*

FREDERICK, a prince of great courage and capacity, was elected emperor on the death of Conrad III. Soon after his election he marched into Italy, in order to compose the disturbances of that country, and be crowned by the pope, in imitation of his predecessors.

CHAP.
XVI.

Adrian IV. who then filled St. Peter's chair, was an englishman, and the son of a beggar, insisted on the roman ceremonial. Frederick looked upon this ceremony as an insult, and refused to submit to it: the kissing the pope's feet, which he knew to be the established custom, did not hurt the emperor's pride; but he could not bear that of holding the bridle and stirrup. At length Frederick digested these two affronts, which he construed only as empty marks of christian humility; but which the papal court received as real proofs of subjection.

A. D.
1152.

The citizens of Rome sent him a deputation, demanding a restoration of their ancient form of government, and offering to stipulate with him for imperial dignity. "Charlemagne and Otho conquered you by their valour," replied Frederick, "and I am your master by
" right

CHAP. "right of succession: it is my right to pre-
 XVI. "scribe laws, and yours to receive them."

The intrepid emperor had not only the pope to subdue, who disputed the empire; Rome, which refused to acknowledge a master; and many other cities of Italy that asserted their independency; he had at the same time the bohemians to humble, who had mutinied against him; and also the poles, with whom he was at war; yet all this he effected.

He conquered Poland, and erected it into a tributary kingdom; he quelled the tumults in Bohemia, and he secured the fidelity of the German princes, by rendering himself formidable to foreign nations. After this, he was obliged to fly back to Italy, where every thing was in confusion. Adrian IV. dying, two opposite factions tumultuously elected two persons, known by the name of Victor II. and Alexander III.

The emperor's allies naturally acknowledged the pope chosen by him; and those princes who were jealous of the emperor, acknowledged the other, Victor II. Frederick's pope had Germany, Bohemia, and one half of Italy, on his side; the rest submitted to Alexander III. On the death of Victor, the emperor caused another pope to be elected; who also dying in a short time, a third was nominated by Frederick: thus the flames of

A. D. civil discord continued to spread. The emperor
 1176. was defeated at sea by the Venetians, and his
 eldest

eldest son Henry, who commanded his fleet, fell into the hands of the enemy. Pope Alexander, in honour of this victory, sailed out into the open sea, accompanied by the whole senate; and after having pronounced a thousand benedictions on that element, threw into it a ring as a mark of his affection and gratitude. Hence the origin of that ceremony which is annually performed by the Venetians, under the notion of espousing the Adriatic.

CHAP.
XVI.

In consequence of these misfortunes Frederick was disposed to an accommodation with Alexander, who received the proposal with great joy, and Venice had the honour of being the place of reconciliation: there the emperor put an end to the dispute, by acknowledging the pope, kissing his feet, and holding his stirrup while he mounted his mule.

A. D.
1177.

The affairs of Italy being thus settled, Frederick set out for the holy wars, where he lost his life, by bathing in the Cydnus; being seized with the same disorder as that which Alexander the Great had formerly with great difficulty recovered from, where he plunged himself, while in a sweat, into that river.

A. D.
1190.

Thus perished Frederick I. in the sixty-ninth year of his age, and thirty-eighth of his reign: a prince of an enterprising spirit, and great capacity, who had the peace of his country always at heart, and who supported the dignity of the empire with equal courage and reputation.

C H A P.

C H A P. XVII.

*France and England, from the Death of Henry II. to
the Reign of Edward I.*

CHAP.
XVII.

THE death of Henry II. was an event esteemed equally fortunate by his son Richard, and Philip Augustus. Philip lost a dangerous enemy, and Richard got possession of that crown which he had so eagerly pursued; both seemed to consider the recovery of the holy land as the sole purpose of their government. The reiterated calamities attending the crusades, taught the kings of France and England the necessity of trying another road than by Constantinople; they determined to conduct their armies by sea, and to carry provisions along with them. The two monarchs put to sea together; and both nearly about the same time were obliged, by distress of weather, to take shelter in Messina, in Sicily, where they were detained during the winter; but some trifling disputes which had happened there between them, laid the foundation of a rancor and jealousy which never after entirely subsided.

A. D.
1190.

After leaving Sicily, the english fleet met with a furious tempest, which drove it on the coast of Cyprus, and was later of arriving than the French; but the English came in time to partake of the glory of the siege of Ptolemais, which lasted two
years,

years, and was at length taken after the loss of three hundred thousand men.

CHAP.
XVII.

Philip being disgusted with the ascendant assumed, and acquired by Richard, returned to France, when, by his intrigues, he seduced prince John, the king's brother, from his allegiance; but a truce being concluded with Saladin, and Richard receiving intelligence of the intrigues of his brother John and the king of France, resolved to return immediately to Europe, where his presence was absolutely necessary. In passing through Germany, in disguise, he was discovered, and thrown into prison by Leopold duke of Austria, and sold to the emperor Henry VI. who had taken some offence at Richard's behaviour in Sicily, and was glad to have him in his power. However, on paying three hundred thousand pounds, the king of England was restored to his freedom.

A. D.
1193.

The joy of the english was extreme on the appearance of their king, who had acquired so much glory, and had spread the reputation of their name to the farthest part of the east. After receiving the ceremony of his coronation, Richard passed over with an army into Normandy, impatient to make war upon Philip, and revenge himself of the many injuries which he received from that monarch; but the taking of a castle, or the surprize of a straggling party, comprehend the whole of this expedition; peace was at length concluded between England and France, when Richard was unfortunately

CHAP. unfortunately slain by an arrow before an incon-
 XVII. siderable castle, which he besieged in hopes of
 taking from one of his vassals a great mass of
 A. D. gold which had been found in the earth.
 1199.

The most shining part of Richard's character was his military talents ; no man, even in that romantic age, carried personal courage and intrepidity to a greater height ; and this quality obtained him the appellation of Cœur de Leon, or the lion hearted.

As he left no issue behind him, he was succeeded by his brother John.

The succession was disputed by Arthur, duke of Brittany, son of Geoffrey, the elder brother of John. The king of France, whose daughter he had espoused, assisted him ; and every thing promised success, when Arthur was taken prisoner by his uncle John, and inhumanly murdered : the whole world was struck with horror at this barbarity, and he was, from that moment, detested by his subjects, both at home and abroad. The Britons waged implacable war against him, in order to revenge the murder of their duke ; and carried their complaints before the french monarch, as superior lord, demanding justice. Philip received their application with pleasure ; he summoned John to stand his trial before him and his peers ; and on his non appearance, he was declared guilty of felony and parricide ; and all his foreign dominions were adjudged forfeited to the crown of France.

France. Philip taking advantage of the defection of John's subjects, which rendered every enterprise easy against him, re-united Normandy to the crown of France, and successively reduced Anjou, Maine, and part of Poitou, under his dominions. To complete his misfortunes, John embroiled himself with the court of Rome about an archbishop of Canterbury, whom pope Innocent III. wanted to nominate of his own authority, in opposition to the laws of the country. This pope, under whom the holy see became formidable, laid the kingdom under an interdict, and forbade John's subjects from paying him any obedience for the future.

CHAP.
XVII.

This ecclesiastical thunderbolt was, at this time, truly terrible ; because the pope put it into the hands of Philip Augustus, to whom he made over the kingdom of England in perpetual inheritance. Philip employed a whole year in building a fleet, and raising the finest army that had ever been in France. John, on the other hand, made a last effort, and found means through that spirit of emulation which had so long subsisted between the natives of France and England, to raise an army of sixty thousand men.

A. D.
1213.

All Europe was held in expectation of a decisive action between the two kings, when the pope artfully tricked them both, and took that to himself which he had pretended to bestow on Philip. This extraordinary transaction was negotiated

CHAP. sociated by Pandolph, the pope's legate to France
XVII. and England. In his way through France he
 observed the great armament of Philip, and highly
 commended his zeal and diligence; and on his
 arrival in Dover, he had a conference with John,
 to whom he magnified the number of the enemy,
 the disaffection of his own subjects, intimating,
 that his only resource was to put himself under the
 protection of the holy see. John consented to
 this proposal; swore to submit himself, and do ho-
 mage to the pope as his liege lord and superior.

During this shameful negotiation Philip waited
 impatiently at Bologne for the legate's return, in
 order to put to sea; the legate at length returned,
 and the king was informed that he was no longer
 permitted to attack England, which was become
 a fief of the church of Rome, and its king a vassal
 of the holy see.

Philip was enraged at this intelligence; he
 swore he would no longer be the dupe of such
 hypocritical pretences; and indeed would not
 have desisted from his enterprize, but the em-
 peror, Otho IV. entered into an alliance with his
 uncle, the king of England, in order to oppose the
 designs of France, now become formidable to the
 rest of Europe. With this view he put himself at
 the head of a prodigious army; and the French
 monarch seemed in danger of being crushed for
 having accepted of a present made him by the
 pope. Philip, however, advanced undismayed,

to

to meet his enemies with an army of twenty thousand men, commanded by the chief nobility in France. CHAP. XVII.

The emperor Otho, on the other side, had with him seven or eight german princes, and a force superior to that of Philip. The two armies met near the village of Bovines, between Lisle and Tournay; where the allies were totally routed, and thirty thousand germans are said to be slain. A. D. 1214.

This victory established for ever the glory of Philip, and gave full security to his dominion. John could therefore hope for nothing further, than henceforth to rule his own kingdom in peace. But the most grievous scene of this prince's misfortunes still awaited him; he was doomed to humble himself before his own subjects: the barons entered into a confederacy, and formally demanded a restoration of their privileges; and that their cause might wear the greater appearance of justice, they also included those of the clergy and people: they took up arms to enforce their request: they laid waste the royal domains; and John, after having employed a variety of expedients, in order to divert the blow aimed at the prerogatives of the crown, was obliged to lower himself, and treat with his subjects.

A conference was held between the king and the barons at Runnemedey, a spot ever since deservedly celebrated as the birth-place of english

G.

liberty.

CHAP. liberty. There John signed and sealed the famous
 XVII. magna charta, or great charter, which either
 A. D. granted or secured very important privileges to
 1215. every order of men in the kingdom; to the barons, to the clergy, and to the people; but John only dissimulated, till he should find a favourable opportunity to revoke all his concessions; and in order to facilitate such an event, he secretly sent abroad his emissaries to enlist foreign soldiers, and to invite the rapacious brabançons into his service, by the prospect of sharing the spoils of England. He also dispatched a messenger to Rome, to lay the great charter before the pope; who, considering himself a superior lord of the kingdom, was incensed at the temerity of the barons, and issued out a bull annulling the charter, and denouncing a general sentence of excommunication against every one who should persevere in maintaining such treasonable pretensions.

John now took off the mask; he recalled all that he had done; and as his foreign mercenaries arrived along with the bull, he expected nothing but universal submission. In this desperate extremity, the barons had recourse to a remedy no less so; they offered to acknowledge as their sovereign prince Lewis, eldest son of Philip Augustus, king of France; the temptation was too great to be resisted by a prince of Philip's ambition.

He sent over to the relief of the barons a body of forces, with his son Lewis at their head: John

was

was deserted by his foreign troops, and sometime a wanderer from town to town, when death put an end to his troubles and his crimes, in the forty-ninth year of his age, and the eighteenth of his reign.

CHAP.
XVII.
A. D.
1216.

John was succeeded by his son Henry III. but nine years old at his father's death ; and for once a minority proved of singular service to England. The earl of Pembroke, who was chosen protector, had a mighty influence on the barons ; most of them secretly negotiated with him, and returned to their duty : Lewis, whose troops were defeated, and all his favourite designs blasted, was glad to make his escape from a country where every thing was become hostile to him.

Henry III. when he came of age, proving a weak and contemptible prince, England was again involved in civil broils, which it would be equally useless and impertinent to relate, as they were neither followed during many years by any event of importance to society, nor attended with any circumstances which can throw light upon the human character ;—their causes and consequences were alike insignificant.

The factious and turbulent barons demanded an extension of their privileges ; and the earl of Leicester, a man of great talents and boundless ambition, was at the head of the mal contents : he had married Eleanor, the king's sister, and hoped to wrest the sceptre from the feeble and

A. D.
1258.

CHAP.
XVII.

irresolute hand that held it. He represented to his associates that assembled at Oxford, the necessity of reforming the state, and of putting the execution of the laws into other hands ; those which hitherto have been found, from repeated experience, so unfit for so important a charge ; and their first state seemed well calculated for the end which they professed to have in view. They ordered that four knights should be chosen by each county ; that they should make inquiry into grievances which their neighbourhood had reason to complain of, and should attend the ensuing parliament, in order to give information to that assembly of the state of their particular counties : thus was a new order of men introduced into the national assembly, and our constitution approached daily nearer to its present form.

The earl of Leicester and his associates, instead of continuing in the same popular course, visibly employed their power for the aggrandizement of themselves and families : the breach of trust was apparent to all the world ; every order of men felt it, and murmured against it ; and the pope, in order to gain the favour of the nation, absolved the king and all his subjects from the oath they had taken to observe the provisions of Oxford. As soon as Henry received the pope's absolution from his oath, he resumed the government ; but the haughty barons could not peaceably resign that uncontrouled power which they had

had so long enjoyed, and civil war was renewed in all its horrors. After several fruitless negotiations, the collected force of the two parties met near Lewes in Suffex, where the royal army was unhappily defeated, and the king and prince Edward made prisoners. No sooner had Leicester obtained this victory, than he shewed a desire of crushing his rivals among the barons, and acting as sole master. The royalists seized the favourable conjuncture, and flew to arms; prince Edward made his escape; and the joy of this young hero's appearance, together with the oppressions under which the nation laboured, soon procured him a force which Leicester was unable to resist. A battle was fought near Evesham, where Leicester was slain, and his army totally routed.

CHAP.
XVII.

A. D.
1265.

Henry, at last, overcome by the cares of government, and the infirmities of age, expired in the sixty-fourth year of his age, and the fifty-sixth of his reign; the longest in the english annals. He was a prince more adapted for private than public life; his ease, simplicity, and good nature, would have secured that happiness in a lower station, of which they deprived him on a throne,

C H A P. XVIII.

*France, from the Reign of Philip Augustus, to the
End of the Reign of Lewis IX. or St. Lewis.*

CHAP.
XVIII.
}

A. D.
1226.

PHILIP Augustus died soon after the return of his son Lewis from England, and left the kingdom of France twice as large as he had received it. Lewis VIII, however, did not encrease the monarchy. His short reign was chiefly spent in a crusade against the Albigenes, in the prosecution of which he died. He was succeeded by his son, Lewis IX. commonly called St. Lewis, who no sooner came of age than he was universally acknowledged to be the greatest prince in Europe. His character is perhaps the most singular in the annals of history. To the mean and abject superstition of a monk, he united all the courage and magnanimity of a hero. So far from taking advantage of the divisions of the english, during the reign of Henry III. or attempting to expel those dangerous rivals from his provinces, which they still possessed in France, he entertained many scruples with regard to the sentence of attainder pronounced against the king's father; and had not his bishops, it is said, persuaded him that John was justly punished for his barbarity and felony,
he

he would have restored all the conquests made by Philip Augustus. But his humane heart became a prey to the barbarous devotion of the times. Being seized with a dangerous illness, which deprived him of his senses, his heated imagination took fire, and he thought he heard a voice commanding him to shed the blood of infidels. He accordingly made a vow, as soon as he recovered, to engage in a new crusade. He spent four years in making preparations, and at length set sail. Instead of proceeding immediately for Palestine, he made a descent upon Egypt, at the head of sixty thousand men, the flower of his kingdom. Yet this crusade, like all the rest, terminated in sorrow and disappointment. One half of these fine troops fell a prey to sickness and debauchery, and the other was defeated at Maffoura, where Lewis beheld his brother Robert killed by his side, and himself taken prisoner, together with his two brothers, the counts of Anjou and Poitiers, with all his nobility.

CHAP.
XVIII.

A. D.
1249.

A treaty was concluded by the foldan, by which the king and the other prisoners were restored to their liberty, on payment of a thousand marks of gold. The affairs of France were in much confusion, which determined Lewis at last to return to Europe; but it was only to prepare for a new crusade. He hoped to make a convert of the king of Tunis, and for that purpose

CHAP. pose landed on the coast of Africa, sword in
 XVIII. hand, at the head of his troops. The french
 army was seized with an epidemical distemper,
 A. D. of which Lewis himself died in the 56th year
 1271. of his age.

The most blameable circumstance of this great monarch's conduct, is his approbation of the treaty between his brother and the pope, relative to Sicily. After the death of the emperor Frederick II. the pope seized upon this kingdom, and offered it to the count of Anjou : he accepted it ; and Lewis permitted a crusade to be preached against Mainfroy, who had now actually usurped the Sicilian throne, in prejudice to his nephew Conradine. The count of Anjou marched into Italy at the head of a numerous army. Mainfroy was defeated and slain, and Conradine appeared in vindication of his native right : he also was routed and taken prisoner, together with his uncle, the duke of Austria, and both were executed at Naples.

C H A P. XIX.

The German Empire, and Italy, from the Accession of Henry IV. to the Election of Rodolph of Hapsburg; with some Account of the Crusades,

HENRY VI. received almost at the same time intelligence of the death of his father, and of his brother-in-law, William, king of Naples and Sicily, to whose dominions he was heir, in right of his wife. Tancred, a bastard of that line, had been acknowledged king by the people, and the see of Rome: the dispute then was, who should wear the crown,—Tancred, who possessed it by right of election; or Henry, who claimed it in right of his wife? This was to be decided by arms; and the sicilians in vain, after the death of Tancred, proclaimed his young son. Henry's fortune prevailed. He ordered the infant king to be castrated; to have his eyes put out; and be confined in a dungeon; his mother and sisters were shut up in a convent, and all the friends of this unhappy family were put to death, by the most excruciating tortures. But his cruelty proved his destruction; for, it is said, that his own wife, Constantia, whose family he had so barbarously exterminated, conspired against the tyrant, and took him off by poison.

CHAP.
XIX.

A. D.
1197.

Upon

CHAP. Upon the death of Henry VI. the empire of
XIX. Germany was divided. His son, Frederick II,
 was but an infant when he was elected emperor
 by a faction, who gave the title of king of the
 romans to his uncle Philip. Another party
 chose Otho of Saxony; who was supported by
 Innocent III. and the king of England, Otho's
 uncle. This junction naturally inclined the king
 of France to the side of his rival faction; clashed
 with faction, and nothing was beheld on all
 hands but the horrors and the miseries of civil
 war.

At length Philip prevailed, and Otho, obliged
 to abandon Germany, took refuge in England.
 He, however, returned soon after to Germany;
 and finding his party still considerable, entered
 into an alliance with his uncle John, king of
A. D. England, against Philip Augustus, king of
1213. France. The unfortunate battle of Bouvines,
 as we have already seen, completed the fate of
 Otho.

Frederick II. now seventeen years of age,
 was universally acknowledged emperor; and in
 order to preserve the favour of the pope,
 he made a vow to go in person to the Holy
 Land.

About this time pope Innocent died, and
 was succeeded by Honorius III. who expressed
 great eagerness in forwarding the crusade. The
 emperor excused himself from the performance
 of

of his vow until he should have regulated the affairs of Italy; and almost all the other european monarchs were detained at home by domestic disturbances: but an infinite number of private noblemen and their vassals took the cross. These adventurers arrived at Ptolemais; and it was resolved in a council of war to besiege Damietta, in Egypt; which was accordingly invested by sea and land, and taken after a siege of eighteen months. However, the fruits of the victory were entirely blasted by the presumption of Albano, a spanish monk, who pretended, as legate of the holy see, and representative of the pope, he had an incontestible right to the supreme command, which he accordingly took upon himself, and brought the army of the cross between two branches of the Nile, when that river, which fertilizes, and defends Egypt, began to run over its banks. The soldan, informed of their situation, overflowed the christian camp, by opening the sluices; so that the legate now saw himself and his troops in the same extremity in which the Egyptians, under Pharaoh, are described, when they beheld the sea ready to rush in upon them. Damietta was restored, and the leaders of the crusade were obliged to conclude a dishonourable treaty, by which they bound themselves not to serve against the soldan for eight years.

CHAP.
XIX.
}

A. D.
1221.

Gregory

CHAP.
XXI.

Gregory IX. who succeeded Honorius in the papal chair, being incensed at the loss of Damietta, wrote a severe letter to the emperor, taxing him with having sacrificed the interests of christianity, by delaying so long the performance of his vow, and threatening him with immediate excommunication, if he did not instantly depart with an army into Asia. Frederick, exasperated at such insolence, ravaged the patrimony of St. Peter, and was actually excommunicated. The animosity between the guelfs and gebellines revived; the pope was obliged to quit Rome; and Italy became a scene of war and desolation.

Frederick, in order to remove the cause of all these troubles, and gratify the prejudices of a superstitious age, resolved to perform his vow; and he accordingly embarked for the holy land, where he succeeded better than any person who had gone before him. He concluded a treaty with the sultan of Egypt, and master of Syria, by which the end of his expedition seemed fully answered. The sultan ceded to him Jerusalem, and its territory, Tyre, Sydon, and the neighbouring countries; after which, the emperor prudently returned to Italy, where his presence was much wanted.

A. D.
1280.

Frederick's reign, after his return from the east, was one continued quarrel with the popes. The cities of Lombardy revolted at the instigation of Gregory

Gregory IX. who also excited the emperor's son, Henry, to rebel against his father. The rebellion was suppressed; the prince was confined, and the emperor obtained a complete victory over the associated towns. Innocent IV. who succeeded Gregory, pursued the same line of conduct; not being able to obtain from Frederick his exorbitant demands, he fled into France, assembled a general council at Lyons, and deposed the emperor; and ordered the electors to choose another, reserving to himself the disposal of Sicily.

CHAP.
XIX.

Henry, the emperor's eldest son, dying soon after his confinement, the empire was declared vacant by the pope; and the german bishops, for none of the princes were present at the instigation of his holiness, proceeded to the election of a new emperor; and they chose Henry, langrave of Thuringia, styled the king of priests; but Henry dying soon after, the same prelates took the liberty to elect William count of Holland, who bore the same contemptuous title of his predecessor.

Fortune, which had hitherto favoured Frederick, seemed now to desert him. He was defeated before Parma, which he had long besieged, and was obliged to retire to Naples, where he died of a fever, in the fifty-fifth year of his age.

A. D.
1250.

After the death of Frederick, a variety of candidates appeared for the empire, and several were elected

CHAP. elected by different factions; but no emperor
Xth. was properly acknowledged, till the year 1273,
when Rodolph, count of Hapsburgh, was unanimously raised to the vacant throne.

C H A P. XX.

Spain, to the End of the Thirteenth Century.

WE left Spain, towards the middle of the eleventh century, dismembered by the moors and christians, and both a prey to civil wars. About that time, Don Roderigo, surnamed the Cid, drove the moors out of the kingdom of Toledo and Valentia. Few kings in Spain were at that time so powerful as he; yet he never assumed the regal title, but continued faithful to his master Alphonso, king of old Castile. He governed Valentia, however, with all the authority of a sovereign, receiving ambassadors, and being treated with the highest respect by all nations. After his death, the kings of Castile and Arragon continued their wars against the moors; and Spain was more drenched in blood than ever, and more desolated.

CHAP.
XX.

Alphonso, surnamed the Battle Giver, king of Navarre and Arragon, took Saragossa from the moors; which city became the capital of the kingdom of Arragon, and never again returned under the dominion of the infidels. Alphonso, count of Portugal, after obtaining a victory over the moors, took Lisbon from them, and caused himself to be crowned king of Portugal. A very few

CHAP. few efforts would now have been sufficient to
 XX.
 have driven the moors entirely out of Spain; but for that purpose it was necessary, that the spanish christians should be united among themselves; whereas, they were perpetually at war with one another. They united, however, at length, from a sense of common danger, and also implored the assistance of the other christian princes of Europe.

Mahomet Ben Joseph, miramolin of Africa, having crossed the sea with an army of near one hundred thousand men, and being joined by the moors of Andalusia, assured himself of making an entire conquest of Spain. The rumour of this great armament roused the attention of the whole European continent. Many adventurers came from all parts; to these the kings of Castile, Arragon, and Navarre, united their forces. The kingdom of Portugal also furnished a body of troops; and the christian and mahometan armies met in the defiles of the black Mountain, or Sierra Morena, on the borders of Andalusia, and in the province of Toledo. The archbishop of Toledo was by the side of the king of Castile, Alphonso the Noble, and carried the cross at the head of the troops. Miramolin had in one hand a sabre, and in the other the alcoran. The battle was long and obstinate, but at length the christians prevailed; and the sixteenth of July, the day on which the victory was gained, is still cele-

A. D.
 1212.

celebrated in Toledo. This seemed a period marked out for the glory of Spain, and the expulsions of the moors. Ferdinand III. took from the infidels the famous city of Cordova, the residence of the first moorish kings. He also subdued the province of Murcia, and made himself master of Seville, the most opulent city belonging to the moors. Death at length put an end to his conquests; and if divine honours are due to those who have been the deliverers of their country, Spain justly reverences the name of Ferdinand III. Alphonso, surnamed the Astronomer, or the Wise, succeeded his father, Ferdinand. This prince rivalled the arábians in the sciences, and the university of Salamanca produced no one equal to him. His collection of laws, called *las partidas*, still continue to form the principal basis of their jurisprudence. In his old age, he saw his son, Sancho, rebel against him; and was reduced to the disagreeable necessity of leagu-
 ing with the moors against his own blood, and his christian subjects. The rebels were overcome; but the good old king died before he had time to enjoy the fruits of his victory. The unnatural Sancho succeeded to the crown; he, however, reigned happily; and his son, Ferdinand IV. took Gibraltar from the moors.

CHAP.
XX.A. D.
1303.

CHAP. XXI.

England, during the Reign of Edward I.

CHAP.
XXI.

EDWARD I. had reached Sicily in his return from the holy land, when he received intelligence of the death of his father, Henry III. and immediately proceeded homeward. As soon as he arrived in England, he applied himself assiduously to the correcting of those disorders which the civil commotions and loose administration of his father, had introduced into every part of his government. His policy, though severe, was equally generous and prudent; by an exact distribution of justice, and a rigid execution of the laws, he gave at once protection to the inferior orders of the state, and diminished the arbitrary power of the great. By these wise measures the state of the kingdom was soon changed; order and tranquility were restored to society, and vigour to government.

Now it was that the enterprising spirit of Edward began more remarkably to shew itself. He undertook an expedition against Lewellyn, prince of Wales, who was obliged to submit, and receive the terms imposed on him by the English monarch; but the oppressions of the victors soon roused the indignation of the welsh, who flew to arms, and Edward again entered Wales with

A. D.
1283.

an

an army. Lewellyn was surpris'd and slain. The welsh nobility submitted to Edward; and the laws of England were established in that principality. Edward's conduct in regard to Scotland, at which his ambition now pointed, serves more to shew his enterprising spirit. The royal house of Scotland being extinct on the death of Alexander III. two competitors started for the crown, Robert Bruce and John Baliol. Each claim was supported by a powerful faction. In this critical situation, the parliament of Scotland, in order to avoid the measures of civil war, embraced the dangerous resolution of appealing to Edward, who was accordingly chosen umpire, and both parties agreed to acquiesce in his decree. His first step was to oblige the scottish parliament to acknowledge that their crown was dependent on England. He next demanded possession of the kingdom, that he might be able to deliver to him, whose right should be found preferable; and this exorbitant demand was complied with, both by the barons and the claimants. He soon after gave judgment in favour of Baliol, who renewed the oath of fealty to England, and was put in possession of the kingdom. Edward having thus established his unjust claim of feudal superiority over Scotland, aspired next to the absolute sovereignty and dominion of that kingdom. He attempted to provoke Baliol by his indignities, to rouse him to rebellion, and to rob

CHAP.
XXI.A. D.
1295.

CHAP. him of his crown, as the punishment of his trea-
 XXI. son and felony; the passive spirit of Baliol, ac-
 { accordingly began to mutiny, and he entered into a
 secret alliance with France, already engaged in a
 war with England. The expences attending these
 multiplied wars of Edward, obliged him to have
 A. D. frequent recourse to parliamentary supplies, and
 1295. introduced the lower orders of the state into the
 public councils. This period, therefore, seems
 to be the true æra of the house of commons; for
 the former precedents of representatives from the
 boroughs, summoned by Leicester, was regarded
 as the act of a violent usurpation, and had been
 discontinued in all subsequent parliaments.

Edward employed the supplies granted by his
 people, in warlike preparations against his nor-
 thern neighbour. At the head of thirty thousand
 men he took Berwick by assault, and routed the
 whole scottish army near Dunbar. The timid
 Baliol, instead of making use of those resources
 which were left, hastened to make his submissions
 to the conqueror; expressed the deepest penitence
 for his disloyalty to his liege lord, and made a
 solemn and irrevocable renunciation of his crown
 into the hands of Edward. The english monarch,
 flattering himself that he had now attained the
 great object of his wishes, in the final reduction
 of Scotland, left the earl of Warrenne gover-
 nor of the kingdom, and returned with his vic-
 torious army into England.

Warrenne's bad state of health not permitting him to continue long in Scotland, left the administration entirely in the hands of Ormby and Cressingham; who, instead of acting with prudence and moderation, exasperated every man of spirit, by the rigour and severity of their government. Among these, William Wallace undertook the desperate project of delivering his native country from the dominion of foreigners. He was endow'd with all the qualities which formed a hero; so that he soon acquired, among his associates, that authority to which his virtues so eminently entitled him: every day brought accounts of his gallant actions; and the scots betook themselves to arms in every quarter; many of the principal nobility openly countenanced Wallace's party.

CHAP.
XXI.

Meanwhile Warrenne having collected an army of forty thousand men, entered Scotland, and attacked him in his camp near Stirling, where the english were totally routed. Warrenne was obliged to retire into England; and the principal fortresses in Scotland surrendered to the conqueror.

Edward was in Flanders when he received intelligence of these events; and having concluded a peace with France, hastened over to England, where he collected his whole military force; at present it was without a head, and torn by intestine jealousies. The elevation of Wallace to

CHAP. the dignity of regent, or guardian of the king-
 XXI. dom, was the object of envy to the nobility, who
 { repined to see a private man raised above them
 by his rank, and still more by his reputation.
 Sensible of these evils, Wallace resigned his au-
 thority ; and the chief command devolved upon
 men of eminent birth, under whom the nobles
 A. D. were more willing to serve in defence of their
 1298. country. They fixed their station at Falkirk,
 where Edward came up with them, and entirely
 routed them. Wallace was betrayed to the
 english ; and Edward, whose natural bravery
 and magnanimity should have led him to respect
 like qualities in an enemy, ordered this illustri-
 ous man to be conveyed in chains to London,
 tried as a rebel and traitor, and executed on
 'Tower-Hill ! But the cruelty exercised on Wal-
 lace, instead of breaking the spirit, only roused
 more effectually the resentment of the scots.

Robert Bruce, son of that Robert who had
 been one of the competitors for the crown of
 Scotland, had succeeded to all his father's pre-
 tentions ; and the death of Baliol seemed to open
 a full career to the genius and ambition of this
 young nobleman. He regretted his engage-
 ments with Edward, and secretly determined to
 seize the first opportunity of embracing the
 cause, however desperate, of his oppressed coun-
 try. In consequence of this resolution, Bruce
 suddenly left the english court, and arrived in
 Scotland.

Scotland. The noblemen were astonished at the appearance of Bruce; yet more so, when he told them that he was come to live or die with them in defence of the liberties of his country; and hoped, with their assistance, to redeem the scottish name from all the indignities which it had so long suffered from the tyranny of its imperious masters. The spirit with which this discourse was delivered, made a deep impression on the minds of the nobles, and roused all those principles of indignation and revenge with which they had long been secretly actuated: Cummin alone, who had privately taken his measures with Edward, opposed the determination of Bruce, who being already informed of his treachery, drew his sword and killed him on the spot.

The murder of Cummin affixed the seal to the conspiracy of the scottish nobles; they had now no resource left but to shake of the yoke of England, or perish in the attempt. Bruce excited his partizans every where to arms; he successfully attacked the dispersed bodies of the english, and drove them out of the kingdom.

Meanwhile Edward was advancing with a mighty force, determined to make the now defenceless scots the victims of his severity; when he unexpectedly sickened and died at Carlisle, enjoining, with his last breath, his son and successor to prosecute the war, and never to desist

CHAP. till he had finally subdued the kingdom of Scot-
XXI. land; but that, as we shall afterwards have oc-
casion to see, the second Edward was little able
to accomplish.

C H A P. XXII.

Britain, during the Reign of Edward II.

NO prince ever ascended the english throne with more advantage than Edward II. he was in the twenty-third year of his age, and universally beloved by the people: he was at the head of a great army, ready to subject the whole island to his sway; and all men promised themselves tranquility and happiness under his government: but the first act of his reign blasted all these hopes, and shewed him totally unqualified for his high station. Instead of prosecuting the conquest of Scotland, according to the desire of his father, he returned into England after two feeble efforts, and immediately disbanded his forces. The next step taken by Edward was no less weak and imprudent: he recalled Piers Gavaston, a youthful favourite, whom the late king had banished the realm on account of his ascendancy over this prince, and whom, on his death-bed, he made him promise never more to entertain.

CHAP.
XXII.

Gavaston no sooner arrived at court than he was loaded with benefits, and exalted to the highest honours; he despised the nobility of the kingdom, and took no pains to disarm their envy, by the moderation and modesty of his behaviour. At length a confederacy was formed against him,
headed

CHAP. headed by the earl of Lancaster ; and Edward was
XXII. obliged to banish him. He was afterwards re-
called, again banished, and again recalled by the

A. D. fond deluded monarch ;—an universal revolt took
1312. place. Edward and his favourite were hunted
from corner to corner, and Gavallon at length
fell by the hands of the public executioner.

Soon after Edward's retreat from Scotland, Robert Bruce made himself master of the whole kingdom, except a few fortresses ; not content with defending himself, Robert made successful inroads into England ; subsisted his needy followers by the plunder of the country, and taught them to despise the military genius of a people who had long been the object of their terror.

Edward, at length roused from his lethargy, assembled forces from all quarters, and entered Scotland at the head of an army of near one hundred thousand men. The Scottish army did not exceed thirty thousand men, who had distinguished themselves by many acts of valour, and who were rendered desperate by their situation.

A. D. Edward came up with Bruce at Bannockburn,
1314. about two miles from Stirling, when both armies engaged with great ardour ; but stratagem decided the fortune of the field : Bruce had collected a number of waggoners, and furnished them with standards ; they appeared on the heights towards the left. The English mistook them for a fresh army coming to surround them ; a panic seized them ;

them; and they threw down their arms and fled. The scots pursued with great slaughter, took many persons of quality prisoners, and Edward himself narrowly escaped.

CHAP.
XXII.

Such was the great and decisive battle of Bannockburn, which secured the independency of Scotland; fixed Bruce on the throne of that kingdom, and may be deemed the most signal overthrow that the english monarchy has received since the conquest.

The public administration was now a scene of fury, confusion, and weakness: the barons took advantage of those calamities, and endeavoured to establish their own independency on the ruins of the throne. The king, who could not exist without a favourite, attached himself to Hugh Spencer, a young man of noble family, and very engaging accomplishments. The earl of Lancaster, and most of the great barons regarding him as their rival, formed violent plans for his ruin: they withdrew themselves from parliament, betook themselves to arms, and demanded the banishment of the favourite, and his father; in which the king was obliged to acquiesce. However, Edward having collected some forces, recalled the Spencers, took Lancaster prisoner, who was condemned by a court martial, and led to execution.

The king of France seemed desirous to take advantage of Edward's weakness, and threatened
the

CHAP.
XXII.

the nation with hostilities. Queen Isabella obtained permission to go over to Paris, and endeavour to adjust matters with her brother. She there found a great number of english fugitives ; among which was young Roger Mortimer. His consequence introduced him to Isabella ; and the graces of his person and address advanced him quickly in her affections ; and at last engaged her to sacrifice to her passion all the sentiments of honour and fidelity to her husband. She ardently entered into all Mortimer's conspiracies ; and having got young Edward into her hands, she publicly declared she would never set foot in England till Spencer was removed for ever from the king's presence and councils. This declaration procured her so much popularity, that she no sooner arrived in England with her son, than the king was entirely deserted. He fled to Wales, where he was seized among the mountains, and confined in Kenilworth Castle ; mean while the queen taking advantage of the prevailing delusion, summoned a parliament in Edward's name, where he was accused of incapacity for government ; and by the authority of her partisans deposed. The prince, a youth of fourteen years of age, was placed on the throne, and the queen was appointed regent during his minority. Mortimer fearing a revolution in Edward's favour, secretly sent orders to the two keepers, who were at his devotion, to dispatch their sovereign. These

ruffians

A. D.
1327.

ruffians went to the king's apartment, threw him on a bed, and thrust into his fundament a red hot iron, which burnt his bowels. CHAP.
XXII.

Thus perished the unfortunate Edward II. It is not easy for imagination to figure a man more innocent and innooffensive, or a prince less fitted to govern a fierce and turbulent people.

C H A P. XXIII.

*The German Empire, and Italy, from the Election of
Rodolph of Hapsburgh, to the Death of Henry VII.*

CHAP. **T**HE german empire could not properly be said
XXIII. to have a head from the death of Frederick II. till
A. D. the election of Rodolph. This great captain,
1273. who had some time exercised the office of grand
marshal to Ottocarus, king of Bohemia, and was
raised to the imperial dignity on account of his
military talents, no sooner found himself in pos-
session of the august throne, than he employed his
authority in suppressing the disorders which had
prevailed during the interregnum. Ottocarus,
king of Bohemia, had seized upon the duchy of
Austria, after the death of Frederick, the last duke.
A diet was summoned on this subject at Augs-
burg, where Ottocarus not appearing, was de-
clared a rebel to the empire, his possession of
Austria was declared illegal, and the emperor was
desired to divest him of those territories. The
emperor accordingly marched against him, and a
battle ensued, in which Ottocarus was slain.—
A. D. Rodolph gave the government of Austria to his
1283. eldest son count Albert: hence the rise of the
house of Austria.

Rodolph spent the latter part of his reign in
establishing the grandeur of his family in Austria ;
but

but notwithstanding all his efforts, he could not procure his son Albert to be elected king of the Romans; which disappointment so chagrined him, that he died soon after.

CHAP.
XXIII.

A. D.
1291.

After an interregnum of nine months, the German princes raised Adolphus of Nassau to the imperial throne. The reign of this prince was one continued scene of troubles, and at last terminated in his deposition.

His necessities had made him guilty of several acts of injustice, which Albert, duke of Austria, dissatisfied at not succeeding to the imperial throne, took care to represent in the worst light. A confederacy was formed against Adolphus, and he was deposed by the archbishop of Mentz, in the name of the princes of the empire; and Albert, duke of Austria, was elected to the imperial throne. Adolphus, apprised of this election, marched towards Albert, to decide the imperial crown by arms: they engaged near Gelnheim; and the battle was maintained with much obstinacy on both sides, till Adolphus received a stroke from the hand of Albert, which brought him to the ground, and was instantly slain.

A. D.
1297.

Albert wishing to have his title confirmed by a new diet, which was accordingly assembled for that purpose at Frankfort, was afterwards solemnly crowned at Aix la Chapelle.

The most remarkable event in this reign is the rise of the republic of Switzerland. Fortified by their

CHAP. their natural situation, surrounded with moun-
XXIII. tains, torrents, and woods, the swiss, having no-
thing to fear from strangers, had lived happily in
a rugged country, suitable only to those who
have been accustomed to a frugal or a laborious
course of life. Equality of condition was the ba-
sis of their government. They had been free
from time immemorial; and when any of their
nobility attempted to tyrannise, they were alto-
gether expelled, or reduced within bounds by the
people. But though the swiss were extremely
jealous of their liberty, they were always sub-
missive to the empire of which they held; and
many of their towns were free and imperial.

Rodolphus always treated the swiss with great
indulgence, and generously defended their rights
and privileges against the noblemen who attempt-
ed to infringe them. Albert's conduct, in these
respects, was just the reverse of his father's; he
wanted to govern the swiss as an absolute sove-
reign, and had formed a scheme for erecting
their country into a principality for one of his
sons.—In order to effectuate this purpose, he
endeavoured to persuade the cantons of Urz,
Schwitz, and Underwald, to submit to his do-
minion; in which case he promised to rule them
with great lenity: but finding them tenacious of
their independency, and deaf to his solicitations,
he resolved to tame them by roughness, and ap-
pointed governors, who domineered over them in
the most arbitrary manner.

Geisler,

Geisler, governor of Ury, ordered his hat to be fixed upon a pole in the market place of Altorf; and every passenger was commanded, on pain of death, to pay obeisance to it; but the independent spirit of William Tell, disdained to pay this absurd homage, on which the governor ordered him to be hanged, but remitted his punishment, on condition that he should strike an apple from his son's head with an arrow. Tell, who was an excellent marksman, accepted the alternative, and had the good fortune to strike off the apple, without hurting his son: but Geisler perceiving a second arrow under William's coat, enquired for what purpose it was intended. "It was designed for thee," replied the indignant swiss, "if I had killed my son;" and, for this heroic answer, he was doomed to perpetual imprisonment.

This, and other acts of wanton tyranny, so enraged the people, that they rose upon the austrian governors, and drove them out of the country. Thus these three cantons, Ury, Schwitz, and Underwald, delivered themselves from the austrian yoke, and established that liberty which they still enjoy. The other cantons soon engaged in this confederacy, which gave birth to the republic of Switzerland. Never did any people fight longer and *harder* for their liberty, than the swiss; they have purchased it by above sixty bat-

A. D.
1388.

CHAP. tles against the austrians ; and it is probable they
 XXIII. will preserve it a long time.

When Albert was on the eve of venturing his forces against that courage, which is inspired by the enthusiasm of new-born liberty, he fell a sacrifice to his rapacity and injustice. He was assassinated by his nephew, John, whom he had deprived of his patrimony. No sovereign was ever less regretted, though few have died more tragically.

The imperial throne continued vacant seven months, from the assassination of Albert. At length, the electors assembled at Frankfort, chose Henry, count of Luxemburg, who was crowned, without opposition, at Aix-la-Chapelle.

The emperors, from the time of Frederick II. seemed to have lost sight of Italy ; but Henry VII. as soon as he had settled the affairs of the north, resolved to establish the imperial authority in that country.

Italy was still divided by the faction of the guelfs and gibbelines, who butchered one another, without humanity or remorse. Pope Clement V. had been obliged to leave Rome, which was in the anarchy of popular government. The colonnas, the urfini, and the roman barons divided the city ; and this division was the cause of the long abode of the popes in France. In the midst of these troubles, Henry VII. appeared in Italy, and caused himself to be crowned king of
 Lom-

Lombardy, at Milan. He next proceeded to Rome, when, after much bloodshed, he received the imperial crown from the hands of the cardinals. Now master of that ancient city, the emperor was going to make good his pretensions to the kingdom of Naples; when he died at Benevento, as it is commonly supposed, by poison given him by a dominican friar, in consecrated wine of the sacrament.

CHAP.
XXIII.
}

C H A P. XXIV.

France, from the Death of St. Lewis, till the Accession of the House of Valois.

CHAP. XXIV. **W**E have already seen the pious St. Lewis perish on the coast of Africa, in a second expedition against the infidels. The most remarkable circumstance in the reign of his son and successor, Philip the Hardy, is the interest that he took in the affairs of his uncle, Charles of Anjou, king of Naples and Sicily, which naturally leads us to an account of the famous sicilian vespers.

Charles, by the severity of his government, had not only rendered himself, but his family, odious to the sicilians; and the insolence and debauchery of the french troops had excited an irreconcilable aversion to the whole nation. John di Prodigia, a sicilian nobleman, secretly prepared the minds of his countrymen for a revolt, and an accident gave it birth. On the evening of Easter-day, as the french and sicilians were going in procession to vespers, a bride happened to pass by with her train, when one Droguet, a frenchman, instantly ran to her, and behaved in a rude manner, under pretence of searching for concealed arms. A young sicilian, flaming with resentment, stabbed Droguet to the heart; a tumult

mult ensued, and two hundred frenchmen were slain on the spot. The enraged populace next ran to the city, crying aloud, let the french die, let the french die; and, without any distinction of age or sex, murdered every person of that nation, in Palermo. The same fury spread itself through the whole island, and produced a general massacre.

CHAP.
XXIV.

Peter, king of Arragon, who had married the daughter of Mainfroy, the former usurper of Sicily, supported the sicilians in their rebellion, and openly claimed the kingdom in right of his wife. The sicilians received him with open arms; he was crowned at Palermo; and Charles was obliged to abandon the island, after having, in vain, besieged Messina for six weeks. He had now no hopes, but from his nephew, Philip, king of France, who promised him support. Pope Martin IV. was also entirely in Charles's interest. This pope excommunicated Peter of Arragon, and gave his dominions to any of the younger sons of France, that the king should chuse to name. Philip, flattered by this proposal, declared his son Charles, of Valois, king of Arragon and Valentia. He put himself at the head of a numerous army, in order to realise these honours; and he furnished, at the same time, his uncle, Charles, of Anjou, with a fleet and army, for the recovery of Sicily.

CHAP. Charles had left a son of the same name at
XXIV. Naples, with strict orders to risk nothing, till his
 arrival with succours from France : but that
 young prince, provoked by the arragonesc fleet,
 sailed out with the force under his command,
 and was defeated, and taken prisoner before his
 father's return ; a circumstance which so much
 affected the king, that he is said to have strangled
 himself with a halter, a death sufficiently mild
 for such a tyrant.

Meanwhile, the french army, under the com-
 mand of Philip, penetrated into Catalonia, and
 laid siege to Gironne : the king of Arragon at-
 tacked a convoy going to the french camp, and
 received a mortal wound. About the same time
A. D. the arragonesc admiral entirely destroyed the
1285. french fleet ; which sunk so deeply in the mind
 of Philip, that he secretly repassed the Pyren-
 nees, and died a few days after at Perpignan.

The reign of Philip IV. surnamed the Fair,
 the son and successor of Philip the Hardy, forms
 an æra in the history of France, by the civil and
 political regulations to which it gave birth, the
 institutions of the supreme tribunals, called par-
 liaments, and the admission of the commons, or
 third estate, into the general assemblies of the
 nation. We shall, at present, confine ourselves
 to the quarrels of Philip with pope Boniface VIII.
 and the extinction of the order of knights tem-
 plars.

Philip,

Philip, who was very needy, thought the clergy ought to contribute to the wants of the crown, without the permission of Rome. The pope prohibited the clergy in general, from granting any aids or subsidies, without leave. This was the first cause of the quarrel between Boniface and Philip; and the insolence of a bishop of Pamiers, put things in a still greater ferment. This man, named Bernard Sayfite, who had rebelled against the king in his diocese, was nominated by Boniface, legate to the french court. An obnoxious subject thus invested with a dignity, which according to the see of Rome, made him equal to the sovereign himself, came to Paris, and braved Philip, threatening his kingdom with an interdict. The pope, at the same time, issued a bull, declaring, that the vicar of Christ is vested with full authority over the kings and kingdoms of the earth; and the clergy of France received an order from his holiness, to repair to Rome. Philip ordered the pope's bull to be thrown into the fire, and prohibited the bishops from departing the kingdom; forty of them, however, went to Rome, notwithstanding the king's prohibition; for which trespass he seized all their temporalities.

The colonnas, with whom Philip had entered into a league, surprised the pope, at Agnani, a town in his own territories; and on this occasion, it is said, Sciara Colonna had the brutality to

CHAP. strike him; crying out, "Tyrant, renounce the
 XXIV. "pontificate which thou hast dishonoured." "I
 "am pope," replied Boniface, with a look of in-
 trepidity, "and I will die pope." This gallant
 behaviour had such an effect on the minds of the
 inhabitants, that they rose against his enemies,
 and rescued him from their hands; but Boniface
 was so much affected by the indignities which
 A. D. had been offered him, that he died in a few
 1303. days.

On the death of Boniface, the cardinals elected
 Benedict XI. who survived his elevation but a short
 period; and it is said, was taken off by poison:
 he was succeeded by Clement V. who being a
 frenchman, and entirely in the interest of Philip,
 fixed his residence in France.

Philip had occasion for the assistance of Cle-
 ment in an affair that lay near his heart, the sup-
 pression of the order of knights templars. The
 great riches of those knights, and other concur-
 ring causes, had relaxed the severity of their vir-
 tues; being all men of birth, they scorned the
 ignoble occupations of a monastic life, and passed
 their time wholly in the fashionable amusements
 of hunting, gallantry, and the pleasures of the
 table. The severity of the taxes had caused a se-
 dition in Paris. The knights templars were ac-
 cused of being concerned in the mutiny: they
 were rich, as it has been observed, and Philip was
 no less avaricious than vindictive. He deter-
 mined

mined to involve the whole order in one undistinguished ruin. He ordered all the templars in France to be committed to prison, on one day, and imputed to them such enormous crimes, as were sufficient of themselves to destroy all the credit of the accusation. They were universally charged with murder, robbery, and the vices most shocking to nature. Above one hundred knights were put to the rack, in order to extort from them a confession of their guilt : great numbers perished by fire, in different parts of the kingdom. In all this barbarous injustice, Clement V. fully concurred ; and without examining a single witness, or making any enquiry into the truth of facts, he abolished the whole order. The templars all over Europe were thrown into prison, and their lands were given to the knights hospitallers, now knights of Malta.

CHAP.
XXIV.

A. D.
1312.

Philip died soon after the suppression of this order, in the thirtieth year of his reign, and forty-seventh of his age.

Lewis X. surnamed Hutin, son and successor of Philip the Fair, survived his father only two years.

Lewis dying without issue, was succeeded by his brother Philip V. surnamed the Long ; whose reign, and also his brother Charles the Fair's, were both short, and neither was distinguished by any thing remarkable. Charles left one daughter ; but as his queen was pregnant, Philip
of

CHAP. of Valois, the next male heir, was appointed re-
XXIV. gent, with a declared right of succession, if the
A. D. issue should prove female. The queen of France
1338. being delivered of a daughter, the regency ended;
and Philip of Valois was unanimously placed
on the throne of France.

C H A P. XXV.

*England, Scotland, France, and Spain, during the
Reign of Edward III.*

WE have already been witness to the miserable death of the second Edward, by the inhuman emissaries of Roger Mortimer, the queen's gallant, who now become the object of public odium. The hatred of the nation daily increased both against him and queen Isabella; the disposition of the people could not long escape the observation of a prince of so much discernment as young Edward, nor fail to rouse his active spirit, against the murderer of his father and the dishonour of his mother. But he was besieged in such a manner by the creatures of Mortimer; that it became necessary to conduct the project of bringing that felon to justice with as much secrecy and caution as if he had been forming a conspiracy against his sovereign. He communicated his intentions to some of the nobility, who readily entered into his views: they surprized the usurper in the castle of Nottingham, and dragged him from an apartment adjoining to the queen's, while she in the most pathetic manner implored her son to spare the *gentle Mortimer*.—A parliament was immediately summoned for his condemnation, and he was sentenced to die, from the supposed notoriety of his crimes without any form or trial. He perished by the hands of the hangman at Elmes,

CHAP.
XXV.

A. D.
1330.

CHAP. Elmes, near London; and the queen was confined during life to her house at Refings; where she languished out twenty-five years of sorrow rather than of penitence.

XXV.

Edward being now master of the kingdom, began his reign by the conquest of Scotland. The wife and valiant Robert Bruce, who had recovered by arms the independency of his country, was now dead, and had left David his son a minor, which gave Edward Baliol, son of John Baliol, who had been crowned king of Scotland, a favourable opportunity of claiming the throne; and Edward promised to assist him in his pretensions. He therefore gave him permission to levy what forces he was able in England; and with not above three thousand adventurers, Baliol gained a considerable victory over his countrymen, in which twelve thousand of them were slain. Baliol soon after this victory was crowned king at Scone; but he lost the kingdom by a revolution as sudden as that by which he had acquired it.—He was suddenly attacked and defeated by Sir Archibald Douglas, and obliged to take refuge in England once more in a miserable condition.

An attempt thus unsuccessfully made by Baliol, only served to inflame the ardour of Edward, who joyfully accepted of that offer of homage and superiority, which it was Baliol's present interest to make: he therefore put himself at the head of a powerful army, in order to reinstate

Baliol

Baliol in his throne. The scots met him with an army more numerous, but less united; a battle was fought at Hallidown hill, a little to the north of Berwick; where about thirty thousand scots fell, and all the chief nobility were either killed or taken prisoners.

CHAP.
XXV.

A. D.

1333.

After this fatal blow Baliol was acknowledged king by a parliament assembled at Edinburgh; and Edward returned in triumph to England; but no sooner were Edward's forces withdrawn, than the scots revolted against Baliol. Edward's appearance a second time served to bring them to subjection; but they quickly renewed their animosities upon his returning, depending on succour from France, as a war was now likely to break out between that kingdom and England.

These transactions naturally lead us to Edward's claim to the crown of France, in the right of his mother Isabella, who was daughter to Philip the Fair.—Philip of Valois, on the other hand, put himself in possession of the government, as being next male heir; and on the queen dowager's being delivered of a daughter, he was unanimously elected king: but Edward did not carry his pretensions so far as to engage immediately in a war with so powerful a monarch as Philip: on the contrary, he went over to Amiens, and did homage for Guienne; which was indirectly acknowledging Philip's title to the crown of France. But the homage was soon followed by

CHAP. by a war ; and a brewer of Ghent was the principal promoter of it, and the person who determined Edward to take the title of king of France. XXV. This brewer, whose name was James Ardevelt, was one of those subjects whom princes ought either to ruin or keep fair with. The prodigious credit he had obtained among his countrymen, made him a necessary instrument to Edward : he placed and displaced magistrates at pleasure ; he was accompanied by a guard, who, on the least signal from him, instantly assassinated any man that happened to fall under his displeasure. This was the man on whom Edward depended for bringing over the Flemings to his interest ; but Ardevelt would not exert this credit in behalf of the English monarch, unless he would take the title of the king of France, in order to make an irreconcilable breach between the two kings.

Edward repaired to Flanders, attended by several of the nobility, and a body of English forces. The French monarch made great preparations against the attack of the English, and a mighty army was brought into the field on both sides.

A. D. Conferences and mutual defiance were all that 1339. the first campaign produced ; and Edward distressed for want of money, was obliged to disband his army and return to England.

But a new event happened which renewed the war between France and England. The count
of

of Mountfort, the heir male of Britany, had seized that duchy in opposition to Charles of Blois, the french king's nephew, who had married the daughter of the late duke. Sensible that he could expect no favour from Philip, Mountfort made a voyage to England, and offered to do homage to Edward as king of France, for the duchy of Britany. He proposed a strict alliance for the support of each other's pretensions.

But the captivity of the count of Mountfort, which happened soon after, seemed to put a stop to all the advantages naturally to be expected from such an alliance. The countess of Mountfort, the most extraordinary woman of her age, roused by the imprisonment of her husband, from those domestic cares to which she had hitherto confined herself, boldly undertook to support the falling fortunes of her family. She presented herself to her husband's troops, holding her young son in her arms; she strictly defended the town of Henebouse, and at length, with the assistance of the english fleet, she obliged the enemy to raise the siege.

A. D.
1343.

In the mean time, Edward invaded Normandy with an army of thirty thousand men: he took several towns, and ravaged the whole province, carrying his excursions even to the gates of Paris. At length Philip advanced against him, at the head of a hundred thousand men: and
Edward,

CHAP. Edward, afraid of being furrounded in an ene-
 XXV. my's country, retreated into Flanders.

In this retreat happened the celebrated battle of Cressy. Edward had luckily passed the river Somme, when Philip appeared in his rear; he therefore embraced the resolution of giving the enemy battle, and chose his ground advantageously near the village of Cressy, where he drew up his army in excellent order, and divided it into three lines. The first line was commanded by the prince of Wales, commonly called the Black Prince, from the colour of his armour; and the second by the earls of Arundel and Northampton; and the king took the direction of the third. The battle began about three o'clock, August the 26th, and continued till evening; when the whole french army took to flight, and was pursued with great slaughter. Almost forty thousand of the french were slain. On his return to the camp, Edward flew into the arms of the prince of Wales, who had distinguished himself in a remarkable manner: "My brave son," cried he, "persevere as you have begun; you are my son, for valiantly have you acquitted yourself to day: you have shewn yourself worthy of empire!"

Edward, instead of expecting that the victory of Cressy would be immediately followed by a total subjection of the disputed kingdom, seemed rather to moderate his views; he prudently limited

mitted his ambition to the conquest of Calais, which was taken after an obstinate siege of twelve months. A truce was soon after concluded with France, and Edward returned in triumph to England.

CHAP.
XXV.

While these transactions were passing on the continent, David Bruce, king of Scotland, whom his countrymen had reinstated on the throne, invaded the northern counties of England, and carried his ravages as far as Durham, where he was met by queen Philippa, at the head of twelve thousand men. A fierce engagement ensued; the scots were chased off the field with great slaughter; the king himself was taken prisoner, together with many of the principal nobility.

A. D.
1346.

A damp, however, was suddenly thrown over the triumphant festivity of the english court, by a destructive pestilence, which about this time invaded Britain, after having desolated the greatest part of the earth. This grievous calamity, more than the pacific disposition of the princefs, served to prolong the truce between England and France.

A. D.
1348.

During this truce Philip de Valois died, and was succeeded by his son John. This weak, but virtuous prince, upon coming to the crown, found himself at the head of an exhausted nation, and a divided and factious nobility.

A. D.
1355.

K

Charles,

CHAP.

XXV.

Charles, king of Navarre, surnamed the Bad, was the principal author of these calamities. He was of the blood-royal of France, and son-in-law of king John; but all these ties, which ought to have connected him with the throne, gave him greater power to shake and overthrow it. He secretly entered into a correspondence with the king of England, and the truce between the two kingdoms being expired, the war was again renewed.

The prince of Wales, with an army of twelve thousand men, had ventured to penetrate into the heart of France. King John, provoked at the insult offered him by this incursion, collected an army of sixty thousand combatants, and advanced, by hasty marches to intercept him.

The prince, not aware of John's approach, lost some days on his retreat, and thereby gave the french an opportunity of overtaking him. They came within fight at Maupertuis, near Poitiers; and young Edward, sensible that his retreat was now become impracticable, prepared for battle with all the courage of a hero, and all the prudence of an experienced general. John, by the superiority of his forces, might have starved the whole english army; but the impatient ardour of the french nobility prevented this idea from striking any of the commanders, so that they immediately

A. D.
1356.

mediately took measures for the assault, with full assurance of victory ; but they found themselves mistaken ; the english received them with desperate valour, put their army to flight, and took their king prisoner.

CHAP.
XXV.

The prince of Wales conducted his royal prisoner to Bourdeaux ; and after concluding a truce for two years, carried him to England. It is well known, that upon this occasion, he behaved with the utmost tenderness and respect to the king of France. His moderation added new lustre to the glory he had acquired by his valour.

The king of Scotland had been eleven years a captive in the hands of Edward, whose superior genius and fortune had reduced at once the two neighbouring potentates with whom he was engaged in war, to the condition of prisoners in his capital ; however, Edward contented to restore David Bruce to his liberty, for the ransom of one hundred marks sterling.

Meanwhile, the captivity of the french monarch, proved the signal of civil war at Paris. Charles, the dauphin of France, who was afterwards the wife king Charles V. was declared regent of the kingdom ; but it was only to see almost the whole kingdom revolt against him.

During these commotions in the state, Charles of Navarre aspired to the crown, and the dauphin and he, waged war with one another, which

CHAP. ended only in a dissembled peace. In this man-
 XXV. ner was the unhappy kingdom rent in pieces, for
 { the space of four years after the battle of Poi-
 tiers.

The state of the english finances made it necessary for Edward to listen to equitable terms of peace, which was at last concluded, upon condition that king John should be restored to liberty, on paying a ransom of a million and a half of our money; and it was stipulated, that Edward, should renounce for ever all claim to the crown of France.

In consequence of this treaty, the king of
 A. D. France was restored to his liberty; but many
 1364. difficulties arising with respect to the execution of some of the articles, he took the honourable resolution of coming over to England in order to adjust them, where he soon after sickened and died.

John was succeeded in the throne of France by his son, Charles V. a prince educated in the school of adversity, and well qualified by his prudence and experience to repair the losses which the kingdom had sustained from the errors of his predecessors.

France was at this time infested with a banditti, whose number amounted to forty thousand, and who bore the appearance of regular armies rather than bands of robbers. As Charles was not able by power to redress so enormous a grievance, he

he wished for an opportunity of discharging
 into foreign countries this dangerous and in-
 testine evil, and an occasion now offered.

CHAP.
 XXV.

Alphonso XI. king of Castile, had been suc-
 ceeded by his son, Peter I. surnamed the Cruel;
 a prince equally perfidious, debauched, and
 bloody. He began his reign with the murder
 of his father's mistress, Leonora de Gusman;
 his nobles fell every day the victims of his se-
 verity; he put to death his cousin, and one of his
 natural brothers, from groundless jealousies; and
 he caused his queen, Blanche of Bourbon, of the
 blood royal of France, to be thrown into prison,
 and afterwards poisoned. Henry, count of Tras-
 tamara, the king's natural brother, alarmed at the
 fate of his family, and dreading his own, took
 arms against the tyrant: but having failed in his
 attempt, he fled to France, to ask the permission
 of Charles to enlist those freebooters into his
 service, and lead them into Castile against his
 brother. The French king, charmed with the
 project, employed Bertrand du Guesclin, one of
 the most accomplished captains of those times,
 to negotiate with the leaders of this banditti.

A. D.
 1366.

This treaty was soon concluded; and du
 Guesclin having completed his levies, pro-
 ceeded on the expedition. Peter, unable to oppose
 so powerful a force, fled from his dominions,
 and craved the protection of the prince of Wales,
 then at Guienne, who promised his support, and

CHAP. marched an army into Spain, for that purpose.
 XAV. Henry, whose army amounted to one hundred thousand men, three times the number of those command d by the Black Prince, gave the english battle on the banks of the river Ebro, where the french and spainards were defeated, with the loss of twenty thousand men ; and du Gu scelin, and other officers of distinction taken prisoners. All Castile submitted to the victor, and Peter was restored to the throne ; but as soon as Edward had retired, and du Gu scelin had paid his ransom, Henry levied some forces anew, and gained a compleat victory over Peter, in the neighbourhood of Tledo ; the tyrant was taken prisoner and slain by the hands of his brother. Henry, though a bastard, was placed on the throne of Castile, which he transmitted to his posterity.

In the mean time, the affairs of the Black Prince were fallen into great disorder ; his ill state of health obliging him to return to his native country, the affairs of the english went into total ruin.

Charles, seizing so favourable an opportunity, stripped them in a few years of all their ancient possessions in France, except Bourdeaux and Bayonne ; and all their conquests except Calais.

A. D. Mean while, the prince of Wales died ; leav-
 1376. ing behind him a character adorned with every eminent

eminent virtue ; and which would throw lustre
on the most shining period of ancient or modern
history. CHAP.
XXV.

The king, survived this melancholly incident
only ~~about~~ ^{less} a twelvemonth ; he expired in the
sixty-fifth year of his age, and the fifty-first of
his reign ; one of the longest and most glorious
in the english annals.

C H A P. XXVI.

*The German Empire and Italy, from the Election of
Lewis of Bavaria, to the Death of Charles IV.*

CHAP.
XXVI

A. D.
1314.

THE death of Henry VII. was followed by an interregnum of fourteen months, which were employed in the intrigues of Lewis of Bavaria, and of Frederick, duke of Austria. Lewis was elected by the greater number of princes; but Frederick being chosen and supported by a faction, disputed the empire with him. A furious civil war, which long desolated both Italy and Germany, was the consequence of the opposition; but the battle of Vechivis, in which the duke of Austria was taken prisoner, fixed the imperial crown on the head of Lewis V.

The emperor had no sooner humbled the duke of Austria, than a new antagonist started up. Pope John XXII. the son of a cobbler, and one of those men, who, raised to power by chance or merit, are haughty in proportion to the meanness of their birth. He excommunicated and deposed the emperor Lewis, for presuming to accept of the imperial crown, without his permission. The emperor, thus deposed, marched with all expedition to Italy, and called a general assembly at Rome; where he deposed pope John,
and

and created a new one, by the name of Nicholas V. But Lewis, notwithstanding this mighty parade, was soon obliged to quit Italy, in order to quell the troubles of Germany; and pope John, though a refugee on the banks of the Rhone, recovered his authority at Rome. Nicholas was made prisoner, and ended his days in confinement.

CHAP.
XXVI.

A. D.
1330.

John was succeeded in the papacy by Benedict XII. who seemed desirous to tread in the footsteps of his predecessors, and confirmed all the bulls, which had been issued by John against the emperor. At length the princes of the empire, ecclesiastical as well as secular, assembled at Frankfort, established that famous constitution, by which it was irrevocably fixed, that the plurality of the suffragans of the electoral college confers the empire, without the consent of the holy see; that the pope has no superiority over the emperor of Germany, nor any right to approve or reject his election; and that to maintain the contrary is high treason.

Benedict XII. was succeeded by Clement VI. a native of France, and so haughty and enterprising as to affirm, that his predecessors did not know what it was to be popes. He began his pontificate with issuing a bull for the election of a new emperor; and Charles of Luxemburg, afterwards known by the name of Charles IV. son and heir of John, king of Bohemia, having made the

CHAP. the necessary concession to his holiness, was elect-
XXVI. ed king of the romans by a faction. Lewis,
A. D. however, maintained his authority till his death,
1347. which happened soon after the election of his
 rival; when Charles, rather by his money than
 his valour, got possession of the imperial throne.

The kingdom of Naples and Sicily still continued to be ruled by foreigners. Naples was governed by the house of France; and Sicily by that of Arragon. Robert, of Anjou, died in 1343, and left his crown to Joan, his granddaughter, who had married her relation, Andrew, brother to Lewis of Anjou, elected king of Hungary; a match which seemed to cement the happiness and prosperity of that house, but proved the source of its misfortunes. Andrew pretended to reign in his own right; and Joan, though but eighteen years of age, insisted, that he should only be considered as the queen's husband. A franciscan friar, by whose advice Andrew was governed, lighted up the flames of hatred and discord between the royal pair; it was therefore resolved, in a council of the queen's favourites, to put Andrew to death. He was accordingly strangled in his wife's antichamber; and Joan married the prince of Tarentum, who had been publicly accused of the murder of her husband. How strong a presumption of her own guilt,

Lewis,

Lewis, king of Hungary, brother to the murdered Andrew, wrote to Joan, that he would revenge the death of the unfortunate prince, on her and her accomplices. He accordingly set out for Naples, carrying along with him a black standard, on which was painted Andrew's murder. He ordered a prince of the blood, and one of the accomplices in the regicide, to be beheaded. Joan and her husband fled into Provence, and waited on the pope at Avignon, a city of which she was sovereign, as countess of Provence, and sold to that pontiff, for eighty thousand florins in gold, which she never received. Lewis having partly effected his purpose, went away satisfied, though the kingdom of Naples was in her power. Joan recovered her dominions, but only to be more wretched.

CHAP.
XXVI.

The reign of the emperor Charles IV. was distinguished by nothing remarkable, except the famous constitution, known by the name of the Golden Bull, from a golden seal affixed to it, which, in vulgar Latin, was called *bullæ*. The stile of this celebrated charter partakes strongly of the spirit of the times. It begins with an apostrophe to satan, anger, pride, luxury; and it says, it is necessary the number of electors should be seven, in order to oppose the seven mortal sins. The seven electors, were the archbishop of Mentz, Cologne, and Triers, the king
of

A. D.
1356.

CHAP. of Bohemia, the count of Palatine, the duke of
XΛVI. Saxony, and the Margrave of Brandenburg.

Charles died in 1378, and was succeeded in all his possessions and dignities by his son, Winceſlaus, whom we ſhall afterwards have occaſion to mention. We muſt now return to the affairs of England.

THE HISTORY OF EUROPE.

C H A P. XXVII.

England, from the Death of Edward III. to the Accession of Henry V. with some Account of Scotland, during that Period.

RICHARD II. son to the Black Prince, came to the throne of his grandfather, when as yet but eleven years of age, and found the people discontented and poor, the nobles proud and rebellious. As the king was a minor, the government was vested in the hands of his three uncles, the Dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester. The different characters of those three princes rendered them also a counterpoise to each other ; so that there appeared no new circumstance in the domestic situation of England, which could endanger the public peace, or give any immediate apprehensions to the lovers of their country. But this flattering prospect proved delusive : dissensions and discontents soon took place among all orders of men. The first tumult was of the popular kind. The public expences made it necessary for parliament to impose a poll tax of three groats a head, on every person, male and female, above fifteen years of age. The inequality of this tax was obvious to the meanest capacity ; and the rigorous manner in which it was levied, made it still more grievous. The discontents of the populace

CHAP.
XXVII.

A. D.
1390.

CHAP. populace being thus prepared, the insolence of a
 XXVII. tax-gatherer, and the spirit of a blacksmith, blew
 { them into a flame. While the blacksmith was at
 work in a village, in Essex, the tax-gatherer
 came to his shop, and demanded payment for his
 daughter. The father replied, that she was be-
 low the age prescribed by the statute. The
 tax-gatherer affirmed, that she was a full grown
 woman, and in proof of his assertion, attempted
 an indecency ; which incensed the father to such
 a degree, that he knocked the ruffian dead with
 his hammer. The bystanders applauded the ac-
 tion, and exclaimed, that it was full time for the
 people to take vengeance on their tyrants, and
 assert their native rights. They flew to arms ;
 A. D. the flame of sedition spread from county to coun-
 1382. ty ; and before the government had the least inti-
 mation of the danger, the disorder had grown be-
 yond all controul or opposition.

These mutinous peasants, to the number of one
 hundred thousand, marched to London under
 their leader, Wat Tyler. They demanded a con-
 ference with the king, who found it necessary to
 go out and enquire their demand. Their re-
 quest seemed highly reasonable ; but Wat Tyler,
 their leader, in making his demands, frequently
 lifted up his sword in a menacing manner ; which
 so much incensed William Walworth, mayor of
 London, who attended the king on this occasion,
 that he lifted up his mace, and struck Tyler so
 violent

violent a blow, as brought him to the ground ; where he was immediately run through the body by another of the king's train.

CHAP.
XXVII.

The mutineers seeing their leader fall, prepared themselves for revenge ; and the king and his whole company must have perished on the spot, had not Richard discovered an extraordinary presence of mind in this extremity : he ordered his company to stop, advanced alone towards the enraged multitude, and accosting them with an affable and intrepid countenance, “ What my “ good people,” said he, “ is the meaning of this “ commotion ; be not concerned for the loss of “ your leader ; I am your king ; I will become “ your leader ; follow me into the field, and you “ shall have whatever you desire.” Overawed by his presence, they implicitly followed him ; and he peaceably dismissed them, after granting them their demands.

Richard's conduct on this occasion, considering that he was only sixteen years of age, raised great expectation in the nation ; but in proportion as he advanced in years, they entirely vanished, and his want of capacity, or at least of solid judgment, appeared in every enterprize which he undertook.

Addicted to vulgar pleasures, he spent his whole time in feasting and jollity ; and dissipated in idle show, or in bounties to favourites of no reputation, that revenue which the people wished to see him employ

CHAP. employ in enterprifes for the public honour and
 XXVII. advantage.

" The duke of Gloucester soon perceived the opportunities which this dissolute conduct of his nephew afforded him of insinuating himself into the affections of the nation ; and he determined to aspire at popularity, as the ladder to the throne.

Richard, however, got intelligence of his designs, and ordered him to be arrested, and carried over to Calais ; where he was soon after murdered. The destruction of the duke of Gloucester was followed by the banishment of two noblemen, the duke of Hereford and the duke of Norfolk, relative to some private dispute ; which brought on a challenge. Hereford was banished for ten years, and Norfolk for life : but Hereford, who was son to the duke of Lancaster, had no sooner left the kingdom, than Richard's jealousy of the power and riches of that family increased ; and he was sensible, that by Gloucester's death he had only removed a counterpoise to the Lancastrian interest, which was now become formidable to the crown : he therefore took every method to sully the reputation of Henry abroad, and to obstruct his alliances, by representing him as guilty of treasonable practices ; and when his father, the duke of Lancaster, died, he took possession of the family estate.

These instances of rapacity and severity procured Richard the universal odium of the people ;

ple ; who turned their eyes towards Henry, now duke of Lancaster, as the only person that could retrieve the lost honour of the nation, or redress the supposed abuses in the government.

CHAP
XXVII.

While the minds of men were thus disposed, Richard went over to quell an insurrection in Ireland, and thereby afforded his exiled cousin an opportunity of gratifying the wishes of the nation. Henry landed at Ravenspur, in Yorkshire, accompanied only by sixty persons : but he was immediately joined by the earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, two of the most potent barons in England, and the malcontents in all quarters flew to arms.

Richard no sooner received intelligence of this invasion, than he hastened over to England, and landed at Milford Haven, with a body of twenty thousand men ; but even this small army was seized with the spirit of disaffection, and the king soon found himself entirely deserted. In this extremity he fled to the island of Anglesea ; but on the promises of loyalty and submission from the duke of Lancaster, Richard was so credulous as to put himself in the power of his enemy. He was carried about in an abject manner, exposed to the insults of the populace ; deposed, confined in prison, and afterwards murdered ; and the duke of Lancaster was proclaimed king, under the name of Henry IV.

CHAP. XXVII. The beginning of the reign of Henry IV. was stained by many acts of blood and violence; all who opposed his title fell a sacrifice to his rigid policy. But all his precaution could not shield him from numerous alarms. The welch made irruptions on the borders, and carried on a tedious and troublesome war; which Owen Glendour, their leader, long sustained by his valour and activity, aided by the natural strength of the country, and the untamed spirit of the inhabitants.

The scots also were tempted by these disorders to make incursions into England. Archibald, earl of Douglas, at the head of twelve thousand men, was overtaken by the Piercies, on his return, from one of those irruptions, when a fierce battle ensued, and the scots were totally routed.

A. D. Douglas himself was taken prisoner, besides a
1402. number of the scottish nobility and gentry.

When Henry received intelligence of this victory, he sent the earl of Northumberland orders not to ransom his prisoners; which that nobleman regarded as his right by the laws of war received in that age. The king intended to detain them, that he might be able to make by their means an advantageous peace with Scotland; but by this selfish policy, he gave disgust to the Piercies. The impatient spirit of Harry Percy, commonly known by the name of Hotspur, could

could not brook this supposed injury ; he therefore inflamed the discontents of his father, who resolved to overturn a throne, which he had the principal hand in establishing. He entered into a correspondence with Glendour ; he gave liberty to the earl of Douglas, and made an alliance with that martial chieftain. But when war was ready to break out, Northumberland was seized with a sudden illness at Berwick ; and young Piercy taking the command of the troops, marched towards Shrewsbury, in order to join his forces with those of Glendour.

CHAP.
XXVII.

The king had happily an army on foot, with which he intended to act against the scots ; and knowing the importance of celerity in all civil wars, he instantly hurried down, in order to give battle to the rebels. The armies were nearly equal in number, consisting of about twelve thousand men each ; and we scarcely find any battle in those ages where the shock was more terrible, or more constant. Henry exposed his person in the thickest of the fight ; and the prince of Wales, his gallant son, whose military achievements became afterwards so famous, signalized himself in a remarkable manner. Piercy supported that renown which he had acquired in many a bloody combat ; and Douglas, his ancient enemy, and now his friend, still appeared his rival, amid the horror and confusion of the fight. At length the death of Hotspur, by an unknown hand, decided

A. D.
1403

CHAP. the victory ; and the royalists prevailed. The
XXVII. death of Glendour, which happened soon after
this victory, freed Henry from all his domestic
enemies ; and a fortunate event, which threw the
heir to the crown of Scotland into his hands,
made him also secure in that quarter.

A. D. The remaining part of the reign of Henry IV.
1413. was chiefly spent in regulating the affairs of his
kingdom. He died in the forty-sixth year of his
age, and the thirteenth of his reign, with the re-
putation of a wise king, but bad man.

C H A P. XXVIII.

*The German Empire, and Italy, from the Succession of
Wincislaus to the Death of Sigismund.*

WINCESLAUS succeeded his father Charles CHAP.
XXVIII.
IV. in the government of the empire, and on the A. D.
1378.
throne of Bohemia, when the church was divided
by one of those contests so disgraceful to Christianity. The italians had raised to the pontificate Urban VI. who confirmed the election of the new emperor, and the french had chosen Clement VII. This pope, who had taken Rome from his rival, was expelled in his turn by the citizens, and afterwards settled at Avignon, the former residence of the french pontiffs. Urban used his victory like a tyrant; but all priests in power, it has been said, are tyrants. The famous Joan, queen of Naples, of whom we have already had occasion to speak, first experienced the effects of his vengeance.

This princess, who had imprudently espoused the cause of Clement, had been several times married, but had no children by any of her husband's : she therefore adopted Charles Durazzio, the natural heir of her kingdom, and the only remaining descendant of the house of Anjou in Naples. But Durazzio thinking it too long to wait for the

- CHAP. crown till the natural death of his adopted mother, associated himself with pope Urban, who
XXVIII.
A. D. crowned him king of Naples at Rome, and deposed queen Joan, declaring her guilty of heresy and high treason. These steps being taken, the pope and Durazzio marched towards Naples. Joan fell into the usurper's hands; who, in order to give some colour to his barbarity, declared himself the avenger of the murder of her first husband. Lewis, king of Hungary, was consulted with regard to the fate of the unhappy queen: he replied, that she must suffer the same death that she had inflicted on her husband Andrew; and Durazzio ordered her to be smothered
1273.
A. D. between two mattresses. Thus perished the famous Joan I. queen of Naples, whose life, character, and catastrophe, have a singular resemblance to those of the unfortunate Mary Stuart, queen of Scotland.
1399.

Mean time Winceslaus gave himself up to all manner of debauchery, and seemed industrious in acquiring the implacable hatred of his subjects, by the cruelties which he exercised upon people of all ranks. On account of these irregularities, and of selling the rights of the empire, the electors deposed Winceslaus, and raised to the imperial dignity Robert count palatine in his place.

Winceslaus was so little mortified at the news of his deposition, that when he received the intelligence

Intelligence, he only requested, as a last mark of the fidelity of the imperial cities, that they would send him some butts of their wine. CHAP.
XXVIII.

About this time Bohemia was involved in many disorders by the preaching of John Huss, rector of the university of Prague, who had embraced the opinions of Wickliffe, and was excommunicated by the pope.

The Roman church not only suffered from those innovations, but also continued in a state of distraction from the schism which still remained, and which the emperor attempted in vain to cement. Gregory XII. who was acknowledged pope in Italy, convened a council in Aquileia. Benedict XIII. who was owned in France, held another council at Catalonia; and the cardinals convoked a third at Pisa. The cardinals, however, proceeded to the deposition of the two popes, and raised to the apostolic chair Alexander V. by which means the schism was encreased, there being now three popes instead of two. A. D.
1410.

Robert died before he was able to settle the affairs of the holy see. He was succeeded in the empire by Sigismund, brother to the deposed Wenceslaus, and king of Hungary, a prince of experience and abilities, and whose first care was to heal the wounds of the church. For this purpose he convoked a general council at Constance, with the concurrence of pope John XXIII. successor of Alexander. A. D.
1411.

CHAP. At this council, where Sigismund appeared in
 XXVIII. all his glory, were present a prodigious number of cardinals, prelates, doctors, more than a hundred sovereign princes, one hundred and eight counts, two hundred barons, and twenty-seven ambassadors from the several courts of Europe, who all vied with each other in luxury and magnificence.

A. D. In the first sessions, the fathers of the council
 1414. concluded, that nothing could so effectually contribute to re-establish the union of the church, as the resignation of the competitors for the papacy. John XXIII. who presided in the council, assented to this opinion, and promised to renounce his title; but afterwards repented of his condescension, and fled from Constance in the night, disguised in the habit of a postilion.

But the council unanimously agreed that John, together with his competitors, Carrario, who had assumed the name of Gregory XII. and Peter de Luna, distinguished by that of Benedict XIII. should be for ever excluded from the papacy. Carrario and John thought proper to yield to the torrent; but the proud Spaniard Peter de Luna would not acquiesce, and he remained obstinate to the last. However, the council pronounced the sentence of his deposition, and proceeded to the election of a new pope. Otho Colonna, who

A. D. possessed the accomplishments of a prince, and the
 1411. virtues

virtues of a prelate, was unanimously chosen on CHAP.
St. Martin's day, whence he took the name of XXVIII.
Martin V. }

The affair of John Hufs came next upon the carpet. John provided with the emperor's safe-conduct, appeared at the council of Constance, in order to justify the doctrine he professed. He was accordingly questioned, in presence of Sigismund, and accused of heresy in thirty-nine articles; which on his refusing to abjure, he was immediately declared a fower of sedition, a hardened heretic, a disciple and defender of Wickliffe. As such he was delivered over to the secular judge, who condemned him and his writings to the flames, and he suffered with great constancy.

Some months afterwards, the council exercised the same severity against a disciple and friend of John Hufs, named Jerome of Prague: this man was greatly superior in understanding and eloquence to Hufs. He, at first had subscribed to the condemnation of his master's doctrine; but being informed with what greatness of soul Hufs had encountered death, he was ashamed to survive him; and having made a public retraction, was consigned to the flames. The hussites revenged the death of their apostle by the most terrible outrages. Zisca their leader, defeated the emperor Sigismund, who had succeeded his brother in the kingdom of Bohemia, in several engagements; and when dying, he ordered a drum to be made

CHAP. XXVIII. of his skin, which was long the symbol of victory.

A. D. Sigismund, on his death bed, nominated as his
1438. successor in the kingdom of Hungary and Bohemia, Albert, duke of Austria, his son-in-law, who was recognized by these states, and also raised to the empire. The house of Austria has ever since preserved the imperial throne.

CHAP. XXIX.

France from the Death of Charles V. to the Invasion of that Kingdom by Henry V. of England.

THE death of Charles V. of France, which happened soon after that of Edward III. of England, put the two kingdoms into similar situations. Both were under the government of minors; and the jealousies between the three uncles of Charles V. the dukes of Anjou, Berry, and Burgundy, distracted the affairs of France, even more than the rivalry between the three uncles of Richard II. disordered those of England.

CHAP.
XXIX.
A. D.
1379.

But, in proportion as the king advanced in years, the factions were composed. His uncle, the duke of Anjou, died, and Charles himself assuming the reigns of government, discovered symptoms of genius and spirit which revived the drooping hopes of his countrymen. But this promising state of things was of short duration: the unhappy Charles fell suddenly into a fit of frenzy, which rendered him incapable of exercising his authority; and though he partly recovered from this disorder, he was subject to such frequent relapses, that his judgment was gradually impaired, and he became incapable of pursuing any steady plan of government.

The

CHAP. The administration fell again into the hands of
XXIX. the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who excluded the duke of Orleans, the king's brother, under pretence of his youth, from any share in the government, and even from the shadow of authority.

While things were in this situation, the duke of Burgundy died. He was succeeded in the duchy by his son, John count of Neven, who disputed the administration with the duke of Orleans, now rising into credit, and hoped to govern France as his father had done.

The people were divided between these contending princes; and the king now resuming, and now dropping his authority, kept the victory undecided. At length the two princes agreed to bury all past quarrels in oblivion, and swore before the altar to the sincerity of their intention; but this solemn preparation was only a cover for the basest treachery, deliberately premeditated by the duke of Burgundy. He had hired ruffians, who assassinated his rival in the streets of Paris. The princes of the blood, combining with the young duke of Orleans and his brothers, made violent war on the duke of Burgundy; and the unhappy king, seized sometimes by one party, sometimes by another, transferred alternately to each of them the appearance of legal authority.

Henry

Henry V. king of England, impelled by the
vigour of youth and the ardour of ambition, de-
termined to take advantage of these confusions,
and to carry war into the heart of France. In
consequence of this resolution, he assembled a
great fleet and army at Southampton, and invited
all the military men in the kingdom to attend
him. But before we speak of the success of that
enterprise, it will be necessary to say a few words
of the reign of Henry V. prior to that period.

CHAP.
XXIX.
}A. D.
1415.

C H A P. XXX.

England and France, from the Invasion of the latter Kingdom by Henry V. to the final Expulsion of the English.

CHAP. **XXX.** **T**HE precarious situation of Henry IV. had so much infected his temper with jealousy, that he entertained unreasonable suspicions with regard to the fidelity of his eldest son; and during the latter years of his life, he excluded that prince from all share in public business. The active spirit of young Henry, restrained from its proper exercise, broke out into extravagancies of every kind: the riot of pleasure, the frolic of debauchery, and the outrage of intoxication, filled the vacancies of a mind better adapted to the pursuits of ambition, and the cares of government. But the nation in general viewed the young prince with indulgent eyes. They observed so many gleams of generosity, spirit, and magnanimity breaking continually through the cloud which a wild conduct threw over his character, that they never ceased hoping for his amendment; and the first step taken by young Henry, after his father's death, confirmed all those prepossessions entertained in his favour. He called together his former companions, acquainted them with his intended reformation, exhorted

exhorted them to follow his example; but strictly prohibited them, until they had given proofs of amendment, from appearing any more in his presence; while the wise ministers of his father, who had checked his riots, were received with all the marks of favour and confidence.

CHAP.
XXX.

Having settled the affairs of his kingdom, Henry had leisure to turn his thoughts towards France, where the civil disorder, as has been already mentioned, opened a full career for his ambition. He accordingly set sail from Southampton, the place of general rendezvous, and landed near Harfleur, at the head of an army of thirty thousand men, mostly archers. Henry immediately invested Harfleur; which was taken by assault, after a siege of six weeks, and the garrison put to the sword. The fatigue of this siege, and the unusual heat of the season, had so much wasted the english army, that Henry was obliged to think of returning to England. He had dismissed his transports, so that he lay under the necessity of marching by land to Calais, before he could reach a place of safety.

A. D.
1415.

A numerous army of sixty thousand men, was by this time assembled in Normandy, under the constable d'Albert. Henry, therefore, was continually harrassed in his march, by flying parties of the enemy; and when he approached the Somme, he saw bodies of troops on the opposite banks, ready to obstruct his passage. His provisions

CHAP. fions were cut off; his soldiers languished with
XXX. sickness and fatigue; and his situation seemed altogether desperate. In this extremity he was so fortunate as to seize an unguarded ford, over which he safely passed, and bent his march towards Calais. But the whole French army was drawn up on the plains of Agincourt, posted in such a manner, that it was impossible for him to proceed on his march, without coming to an engagement.

Nothing in appearance could be more unequal than the battle, upon which the safety and honour of Henry now depended. The english army laboured under every discouragement. The enemy was four times more numerous, headed by the dauphin, and all the princes of the blood, and plentifully supplied with provisions. Henry's situation was exactly similar to that of Edward at Cressy, and of the Black Prince, at Portiers. He observed also the same prudent conduct, which had been followed by those great commanders. He drew up his army on a narrow ground, between two woods, which guarded each flank. In that posture he patiently waited the attack of the enemy.

Had the french commander been able to reason justly on the circumstances of the two armies, or to profit by past experience, he would have declined a combat, and have waited till necessity had obliged the english to advance and relinquish the advantages of situation; but the impetuous
valour

valour of the french nobility, and a vain confidence in superior numbers, made him hazard an action, which proved the source of infinite calamities to his country.

CHAP.
XXX.
A. D.
1415.

No victory was ever more honourable, or more complete, than that of Agincourt. The loss of the french was incredibly great. The constable d'Albert, and seven princes of the blood, were slain: five princes were taken prisoners, together with fourteen thousand persons of different ranks; and about ten thousand frenchmen were left dead on the field of battle. Yet this victory, so fatal to France, was rather ostentatious than useful to the conquerors, though their loss was very inconsiderable. Henry was obliged to return to England, in order to raise a fresh supply of men and money; and it was not till after an interval of two years, that any body of english troops appeared in France.

In the mean time, France was exposed to all the furies of civil war; and the several parties became every day more enraged against each other. Bois Bourbon, favourite to queen Isabella, having been accused by the count of Armagnac, of a commerce of gallantry with that princess, had been put to the torture, and afterwards thrown into the Seine. The queen herself was sent to Tours, and confined under a guard. After suffering these multiplied insults, she no longer scrupled to enter into a correspondence

M

with

CHAP. the duke of Burgundy ; and as her son, Charles,
 XXX. { the dauphin, was entirely governed by the faction
 of Armagnac, she extended her animosity even
 to him, and sought his destruction with the most
 unrelenting hatred.

The duke of Burgundy entered France, at the
 head of a great army of Flemings, overrun most
 part of the kingdom, and released the queen from
 her confinement. He was afterwards slain by the
 dauphin's party, at an interview at Montereau.
 In consequence of this act of barbarity, and the
 progress of Henry's arms, who had landed in
 Normandy, at the head of twenty thousand men,
 the queen and the new duke of Burgundy,
 threatening vengeance for the murder of his fa-
 ther, concluded the famous treaty of Troye, by
 which the crown of France was transferred to the
 house of Lancaster. The principal articles were,
 that Henry should espouse the princess Catha-
 rine ; and that her father, Charles VI. should en-
 joy, during his life time, the title and dignity of
 king of France ; that Henry should be declared
 and acknowledged heir of the monarchy, and be
 entrusted with the administration of the govern-
 ment.

A. D.
 1420.

A few days after the signing of this treaty,
 Henry espoused the princess Catharine. He car-
 ried his father-in-law to Paris ; he put himself in
 possession of that capital. He supported the
 duke of Burgundy, in procuring a sentence against
 the

the murderers of his father, and he turned his arms with success against the adherents of the dauphin.

CHAP.
XXX.

To crown all the prosperities of Henry, his queen was delivered of a son, who was called by his father's name. The infant prince seemed to be universally regarded as the heir of both monarchies. But the glory of Henry, when near its height, was suddenly restrained by the hand of nature; and all his towering projects vanished into air. He was seized with a fistula, which proved mortal. He left the regency of France to his eldest brother, the duke of Bedford; that of England, to his younger brother, the duke of Gloucester; and the care of his son's person to the earl of Warwick.

A. D.
1422.

Henry V. possessed many eminent virtues, and his abilities were equally conspicuous in the cabinet and the field. The boldness of his plans was no less remarkable than his personal valour in conducting them. He had the talent of attaching his friends by affability, and of gaining his enemies by address and clemency.

In less than two months after Henry's death, his father-in-law, Charles VI. of France, terminated his unhappy life; and the dauphin was crowned at Poitiers, under the name of Charles VII. Rheims, the usual place of such ceremony, being in the hands of his enemies.

CHAP. Catharine of France, Henry's widow, married
 XXX. soon after his death, Sir Owen Tudor, a welch
 gentleman. She bore him two sons, the eldest
 of whom was created earl of Richmond; the second earl of Pembroke. The family of Tudor, first raised to distinction by this alliance, afterwards mounted, as we shall have occasion to see, the english throne.

The duke of Bedford, the most accomplished prince of his age, was intrusted with the administration. Observing the ardour of the scots to serve in France, where Charles treated them with great honour and distinction, he persuaded the english council to form an alliance with James I. their prisoner, to free that prince from his long captivity, and to connect him with England, by marrying him to a daughter of the earl of Somerset, and cousin to the young king. The alliance was accordingly formed; James was restored to the throne of his ancestors; proved, during his short reign, one of the most illustrious princes that had ever swayed the scottish sceptre. He was murdered by his traitorous kinsman, the earl of Athol, in 1437.

The duke of Bedford did not neglect the operations of war. He reduced almost every fortress on this side the Loire; and the battle of Verneuil, in which the scots and french were defeated, threatened Charles with the total loss of his kingdom; when a train of singular circumstances

stances saved him on the brink of ruin; and lost the english such an opportunity of completing their conquests, that they were never afterwards able to recall.

CHAP.
XXX.

The regent resolved on an undertaking, which, he hoped, would prepare the way for the final conquest of France.

The city of Orleans was so situated between the provinces commanded by Henry, and those possessed by Charles, that it opened an easy entrance to either; and as the duke of Bedford intended to make a great effort for penetrating into the south of France, it was necessary to begin with the siege of this place, now become the most important in the kingdom. The french king used every expedient to supply the city with a garrison and provisions, and the english, left no method unemployed for reducing it. At length Orleans was on the point of surrendering, when it was unexpectedly saved by a woman.

A. D.
1428.

In the village of Domeremi, near Vaucouleurs, on the borders of Lorrain, lived a country girl, of twenty-seven years of age, whose name was Joan d'Arc, and who, in the station of servant to an inn, had been accustomed to attend the horses of the guests, to ride them without saddle to the watering places, and to perform other offices, which commonly fall to the share of men servants. This girl, inflamed by the frequent accounts of the rencounters at the siege of

CHAP. Orleans, and affected with the miseries of her
XXX. country, but more particularly with those of the
 youthful monarch, whose gallantry made him the
 idol of the softer sex, was seized with a wild de-
 sire of bringing relief to her sovereign, in his
 present unhappy circumstances. Her inexpe-
 rienced mind, working day and night on this fa-
 vourite object, mistook the impulses of passion
 for heavenly inspirations; and she fancied she
 saw visions, and heard voices exhorting her to re-
 establish the throne of France, and expel the fo-
 reign invaders. She went to Vancoleurs, pro-
 cured admission to Baudricourt the governor, and
 informed him of her inspirations and intentions.

A. D. Baudricourt observed something extraordinary in
 1429. the maid, or the use that might be made of such
 an engine, and sent her to the french court,
 which then resided at Chinon.

Joan was no sooner introduced to the king,
 than she offered to raise the siege of Orleans, and
 conduct him to Rheims, to be there crowned and
 anointed; and she demanded, as the instrument
 of her future victories, a particular sword, which
 was kept in the church of St. Catharine of Fier-
 bois. The more the king and his ministers were
 determined to give into the illusion, the more
 scruples they pretended. An assembly of grave
 doctors and theologians were appointed to ex-
 amine Joan's mission, who pronounced it un-
 doubted and supernatural; and a jury of matrons
 declared

declared her an unpotted virgin. Her requests were now granted. She was armed cap-a-pe, mounted, on horseback, and shown in that martial habiliment to the whole people. CHAP.
XXX.

The english, at first, affected to speak with derision of the maid, and her heavenly commission; but they were secretly struck with the strong persuasion which prevailed in all around them; they found their courage daunted by degrees; and thence began to infer a divine vengeance hanging over them. A silent astonishment reigned among those troops, formerly so elated with victory, and so fierce for combat. The maid entered the city of Orleans, at the head of a convoy, arrayed in her military garb, and displaying her consecrated standard. She was received as a celestial deliverer by the garrison and inhabitants; and actually obliged the english to raise the siege of that city, after defeating them in several attacks. The raising the siege of Orleans was one part of the maid's promise to Charles, the crowning him at Rheims was the other. She now declared it was time to complete that ceremony. He accordingly set out for Rheims at the head of twelve thousand men; every place opened its gaets to him. Rheims sent him its keys, and the ceremony of his coronation was therefore performed with the utmost solemnity.

Charles thus crowned and anointed, became more respectable in the eyes of all his subjects.

CHAP. Many places submitted to him immediately after
 XXX. his coronation. The duke of Bedford, in this
 dangerous crisis, employed every resource to prevent the bad consequences of this infatuation. He brought over the young king of England, and had him crowned and anointed at Paris. But he expected more effect from an incident, which put into his hands the author of all his misfortunes. The maid of Orleans was taken prisoner in a sally she made from the town of Campeigne, at that time besieged by the duke of Bedford; and the regent, resolved upon her ruin, ordered her to be tried by an ecclesiastical court for sorcery, impiety, idolatry, and magic. She was found guilty by her ignorant or iniquitous judges, of all these crimes, aggravated by heresy. Her revelations were declared to be the invention of the devil, to delude the people; and this admirable heroine, to whom the more generous superstitions of
 A. D. the ancients would have erected altars, was delivered
 1431. over alive to the flames, and expiated by that dreadful punishment, the signal services which she had rendered to her prince, and her native country.

The affairs of the english, however, instead of being advanced by this act of cruelty, went every day more and more to decay. The duke of Burgundy deserted the interests of the english, and formed an alliance with the french king; the duke of Bedford died soon after; and the violent
 factions,

factions, which prevailed in the court of England between the duke of Gloucester and the cardinal of Winchester, prevented the english from taking proper measures for repairing their losses ; and they were expelled from all their possessions on the continent, except Calais.

CHAP.
XXX.

As Henry VI. had now reached the years of manhood ; it was necessary to think of chusing him a queen : he was therefore contracted to Margaret of Anjou, daughter of Regnier, titular king of Sicily, Naples, and Jerusalem ; descended from a count of Anjou, who had left these magnificent titles to his posterity, without any real power or possession. The treaty of marriage was ratified in England, and Margaret fell immediately into close connection with the cardinal and his party ; who fortified, by her powerful patronage, resolved on the final ruin of the duke of Gloucester. The first step taken was to accuse his dutcheſs of witchcraft ; for which she was condemned to do public penance, and suffer perpetual imprisonment. The duke was next accused of treason, and thrown into prison : where he was soon after found dead in his bed ; and no one doubted but he had fallen a victim to the vengeance of his enemies. Thus was England torn to pieces by civil dissensions ; and Charles, occupied at home in regulating the government, and fencing against the intrigues of his son Lewis, scarcely ever attempted to avail himself

A. D.
1443.

A D.
1449.

CHAP. himself of her intestine broils. The affairs of the
XXX. two kingdoms, therefore, became for a while distinct. But before we carry further the history of either, it will be necessary to take a view of the state of the empire, from the death of Sigismund till the accession of Maximilian,

CHAP. XXXI.

*The German Empire, and Italy, from the Death of
Sigismund, to the Accession of Maximilian.*

SIGISMUND was succeeded in the kingdom CHAP.
XXXI.
of Hungary and Bohemia, and also the empire, as
has been already observed, by his son in law Al-
bert, the second duke of Austria. The only en-
terprise of moment in which this prince was en-
gaged, during his short reign, was an expedition
against the Turks in Bulgaria; where he was seiz-
ed with a dysentery, before an action took place,
and died at the village of Long, in his return to
Vienna.

Albert was succeeded in the imperial throne by
his cousin Frederick of Austria, the third emperor
of that name. The kingdoms of Hungary and
Bohemia were settled on Ladislaus, Albert's in-
fant son, who was committed to the guardianship
of Frederick.

The emperor's first care was to heal the schism,
which still continued in the church. For this
purpose he set out for Basil, where the council was
yet assembled, and had raised to the papacy
Amadeus, duke of Savoy, under the name of
Felix V. in opposition to Eugenius IV. But Fre-
derick prevailed upon Felix to abdicate the apos-
tolic chair, on certain conditions; which were
confirmed

CHAP. confirmed by Nicholas V. who had succeeded
 XXXI. Eugenius.

The peace of the church being thus restored, Frederick marched into Italy, where the imperial authority was gone into utter decay. Milan was in the hands of Francis Sforza, a peasant's son, but one of the greatest warriors of his age, and now become the most powerful man in Italy. He sent ambassadors to the emperor, inviting him to that city, where he should receive the iron crown. From Milan, Frederick proceeded to Viterbo, where he was in danger of his life from a tumult of the people; so indifferently attended was this successor of Charlemagne. From Viterbo he repaired to Rome, where he received the imperial crown from the hand of the pope. Having transacted matters at Rome, Frederick departed on his return to Germany, where he found himself involved in a number of difficulties, out of which he was never able fully to extricate himself.

A. D. 1452.

In the mean time, Ladislaw, king of Hungary, and Bohemia, died, and various competitors arose for those crowns. Among these was the emperor Frederick, who reaped nothing but damage and disgrace from a civil war, which desolated Germany for many years; but which was productive of no events that merits our attention. His son, Maximilian, was more fortunate, and better deserved success.

This

This young prince, who was active and enterprising as his father was indolent and timid, married at twenty years of age, the only daughter of Charles the Rash, duke of Burgundy, who brought him Flanders, Franche Compte, and all the Low Countries.

CHAP.
XXXI.

About this time died pope Innocent VIII. who was succeeded in the papacy by Roderick Bor-
gia, under the name of Alexander VI. Nor did
the emperor Frederick long survive these altera-
tions.

A. D.
1492.

The reign of Maximilian, already elected king of the romans, forms a more interesting period than that over which we have now travelled, and opens a vista into some of the grandest scenes in history. But a variety of objects must occupy our attention, before we carry further the affairs of the empire.

C. H A P. XXXII.

England, during the Contest between the Houses of York and Lancaster, till the Accession of the House of Tudor.

CHAP. XXXII. **I**N proportion as Henry VI. advanced in years, his incapacity appeared every day in a fuller light; the more he was known, the more his authority was despised; and as the english had abandoned their dominions in France, and were now engaged in no foreign wars; men of restless and ambitious spirits took occasion to disturb his government, and tear the bowels of their native country.

A. D. 1450.

But the miseries of Henry and of England, did not arise alone from these causes; a pretender to the crown appeared; and a title which had never been disputed during the prosperous reign of Henry V. was now called in question under his feeble successor. This competitor was Richard, duke of York, descended by his mother from Philippa, only daughter of the duke of Clarence, second son of Edward III. and consequently stood in the order of succession before the king who derived his descent from the duke of Lancaster, third son of that monarch.

Such

Such a claim could not, in many respects, have fallen into more dangerous hands. The duke of York was a man of valour and abilities, generally beloved by the people; whose discontents, at this time, rendering every combination of the great more alarming to the throne.

CHAP.
XXXII.

Administration was now in the hands of the queen; and the earl of Suffolk, who had attracted universal odium. Margaret was still regarded as a french woman, and a latent enemy to the kingdom, who had betrayed the interests of England, in favour of her family and her country. Suffolk was considered as her accomplice; and the murder of the duke of Gloucester, in which both were known to have been concerned, rendered them yet more obnoxious to the nation.

The partisans of the duke of York took advantage of these topics of popular discontents, to impeach the earl of Suffolk in parliament, of various crimes and misdemeanors; and the king, in order to save his minister, banished him the kingdom during five years. But his enemies, sensible that he would be recalled on the first opportunity, employed the captain of a ship to intercept him in his passage to France. He was accordingly seized near Dover, his head was struck off on the side of a long boat, and his body thrown into the sea.

Henry fell about this time into a distemper, which increased his natural imbecility; and the queen

CHAP. queen and the council, unable to resist the popular party, were obliged to appoint the duke of
 XXXII. York, lieutenant of the kingdom, with powers to open and hold a session of parliament, and that assembly created him protector during pleasure.

In the mean time, Henry recovering from his distemper, so far as to be able to maintain the appearance of royal authority, his friends urged him to resume the government, and to annul the regency of Richard. The duke of York, sensible of his danger, levied an army, in order to support his parliamentary commission. A battle
 A. D. was fought near St. Alban's, where the lancastrians were routed, and the king himself taken prisoner by the duke, who treated him with great
 1455. tendernefs. Richard, however, did not yet lay claim to royalty; he was still content with the title of protector; and an outward reconciliation took place between the parties. But a contest for a crown could not be thus peaceably accommodated; both sides openly prepared to decide the dispute by arms.

A battle was fought near Blore-heath, where the lancastrians were again defeated. But that victory was not sufficient to decide the fate of England, and fortune soon shifted sides. When the two armies approached each other, near Ludlow, and a general action was every hour expected, Sir Andrew Trollop, who commanded a
 choice

choice body of veterans, deserted to the king; and the yorkists were so much dismayed at this instance of treachery, that they separated, without striking a blow. CHAP.
XXXII.

In this extremity the duke of York fled to Ireland, and his partisans in England, kept themselves every where in readiness, to rise on the first summons of their leaders. That summons was given by the earl of Warwick, governor of Calais, the most extraordinary man of his time, and commonly known by the name of the king-maker. He landed in Kent, where he was joined by several persons of distinction; and his army increased every day. He advanced to meet the royal army, and a battle was fought at Northampton, where the lancastrians were totally routed. Henry himself, that empty shadow of a king, was again made prisoner, and once more carried in triumph to his capital.

A. D.
1460.

A parliament was now summoned at Westminster, where the duke of York soon appeared from Ireland, and put in his claim to the crown. It was there solemnly debated, each side producing their reasons, without fear or controul. The duke of York, though a conqueror, could not entirely gain his cause. It was determined, that Henry should possess the throne during his life; and that the duke of York should be appointed his successor, to the utter exclusion of the prince of Wales.

CHAP.
XXXII.

After the unfortunate battle of Northampton, queen Margaret had fled with her infant son to Durham. Her affability, insinuation, and address, talents in which she excelled, wrought so powerfully on the nobility of that quarter, that she soon found herself at the head of an army of twenty thousand men, and collected with a celerity, which was neither expected by her friends, or apprehended by her enemies.

In the mean time the duke of York hastened northward, with a body of five thousand men, to suppress, as he imagined, the beginning of an insurrection. He met the queen near Wakefield, gave her battle, and was killed in the action. His body was found among the slain: his head was cut off by Margaret's orders, and fixed on the gates of York, with a paper crown upon it, in derision of his pretended title. Immediately after this important victory, queen Margaret marched towards London, where the earl of Warwick was left with the command of the yorkists. On the approach of the lancastrians, that nobleman led out his army, and gave the queen battle at St. Alban's. Margaret was again victorious; she had the pleasure of seeing the formidable Warwick fly before her, and of rescuing the king, her husband, from captivity.

A. D.
1461.

But Margaret's triumph, though glorious, was of short duration, and not altogether complete. Warwick was still in possession of London, on which

which she made an unsuccessful attempt ; and Edward, earl of Marche, eldest son of the late duke of York, advanced upon her from the other side, and was soon in a condition of giving her battle, with superior forces.

CHAP.
XXXII.

She was sensible of her danger in such a situation, and retreated with her army to the north ; while Edward entered the capital, amid the acclamations of the citizens, who proclaimed him king, under the title of Edward IV. and this popular election was ratified by an assembly of lords and bishops.

Young Edward, now in his twentieth year, was of a temper well fitted to make his way through such a scene of war, havock, and devastation, as was presented before him. He was not only bold, active and enterprising, but his hardness of heart, and severity of character, rendered him impregnable to all those movements of compassion, which might relax his vigour in the prosecution of the most bloody design upon his enemies. Hence the scaffold, as well as the field, during this reign, incessantly smoaked with the noblest blood of England. The animosity between the two contending families, was now become implacable ; and the nation, divided in its affections, took different symbols of party. The adherents of the house of Lancaster chose, as their mark of distinction, a *red rose* ; those of York the *white* ; and these civil wars were thus

CHAP. known over Europe by the name of the quarrel
 XXXII. between the two roses.

Queen Margaret having assembled an army of sixty thousand men in the north, the king and Warwick hastened with a force of forty thousand men, to check her progress. The two armies met at Tooton, and a fierce and bloody battle ensued; which ended in the total defeat of the Lancastrians. Henry and Margaret had remained at York during the action; but hearing the fate of their army, they fled with great precipitation into Scotland.

We must here say a few words of the state of that country. James I. who was long a prisoner in England, avoided all hostilities with foreign nations. His son and successor James II. was killed by the bursting of a cannon at the siege of Roxbury. James III. who was yet a minor, succeeded his father; and the distractions common to minorities ensued in the government; so that
 A. D. Margaret, when she arrived in Scotland, found
 1464. there a people little less divided by faction than those from whom she fled.

The Scottish council, however, agreed to assist Margaret with a few troops; and she ventured once more to take the field; but her little army was soon after totally routed by lord Montacute. Margaret fled with her son into a forest, where she endeavoured to conceal herself; but was beset during the darkness of the night by robbers,

robbers, who despoiled her of her jewels, and treated her with the utmost indignity. She at length, by the assistance of one of them, to whom she made known her station escaped to her father in Flanders. Henry was less fortunate; he lay concealed during a twelvemonth in Lancashire; but was at last detected, delivered up to Edward, and thrown into the tower.

CHAP.
XXXII.

The youthful monarch, thus rid of all his enemies, resolved to marry, in order to secure his throne by issue, as well as alliances; and he cast his eye on Bona of Savoy, sister to the queen of France. The negociation was committed to the earl of Warwick, who went over to Paris, where the princess then resided; his proposals were accepted, and the treaty was fully concluded. But whilst the earl was hastening the negociation in France, the king himself rendered it abortive, by marrying Elizabeth Woodville, with whom he had fallen in love.

Warwick no sooner received intelligence of the king's marriage, than he returned to England, flaming with rage and indignation, of being employed in a deceitful treaty. The king was sensible that Warwick had been ill used; but his pride, or false shame, prevented him from making an apology; that nobleman was therefore permitted to depart the court in the same bad humour that he came. The advancement of the queen's relations into offices of power and trust, to the

CHAP. exclusion of those of Warwick, heightened the
XXXII. discontent, and made him resolve to ruin that king
 he had made.

In order to effect this purpose, Warwick drew over to his interest the duke of Clarence, the king's second brother, by offering him in marriage his eldest daughter, and coheirefs of his immense fortunes. He also entered into a league with queen Margaret, his inveterate enemy; which brought him the whole body of lancastrians. Both parties now prepared for a general decision by arms; and a decisive action was every moment expected; when Edward finding himself betrayed by the marquis of Montague, and suspicious of other commanders, suddenly abandoned his army, and fled to Holland. Henry VI. was taken from his confinement in the tower, and placed once more upon the throne; and a parliament called under the influence of Warwick, declared Edward IV. an usurper.

But this revolution was only the effect of the giddiness of faction. Warwick was no sooner at the helm of government, than his popularity began to decline. The king was emboldened to return; and though he brought with him only two thousand men, he soon found himself in a condition to face the earl of Warwick, who had taken post at Barnet. The city of London opened its gates to Edward, who thus became at once master of his capital, and of the person of his rival
 Henry,

Henry, doomed to be the perpetual sport of fortune. In the mean time, the duke of Clarence, Warwick's son in law, deserted to the king, and carried along with him a body of twelve thousand men. But Warwick was now too far advanced to retreat, and was therefore obliged to hazard a general engagement. The battle was fought with great obstinacy on both sides. At length the yorkists prevailed, and Warwick fell, covered with a multitude of wounds.

CHAP.
XXXII.

A. D.

1471.

Queen Margaret and her son prince Edward, now about eighteen years of age, landed from France the same day on which the battle was fought. She had hitherto sustained the shocks of fortune with surprising fortitude; but when she received intelligence of her husband's captivity, and of the defeat and death of the earl of Warwick, her courage failed her. Encouraged, however, by the appearance of Tudor earl of Pembroke, who exhorted her still to hope for success, she resumed her former spirits, assembled an army, fought Edward at Tewkesbury, on the banks of the Severn, where the lancastrians were totally defeated. Margaret and her son were taken prisoners, and brought to the king, who asked the prince in an imperious tone, how he dared to invade his dominions. "I came hither," replied the undaunted youth, more mindful of his high birth than his present fortune, "to revenge my father's wrongs, and rescue my just in-

CHAP. "heritance out of your hands." Incensed at his
 XXXII. freedom, instead of admiring the boldness of his
 spirit, the ungenerous Edward struck him on the
 face with his gauntlet; and the duke of Clarence
 and Gloucester taking this blow for a signal of
 further violence, instantly dispatched him with
 their daggers. Margaret was thrown into the
 tower, where her husband Henry had just ex-
 pired; and it is generally believed that the duke
 of Gloucester killed him with his own hands.

A. D. The hopes of the house of Lancaster being thus
 1474. extinguished, Edward projected the invasion of
 France, in order to recover the dominions lost un-
 der his predecessor. He accordingly passed over
 to Calais with an army of sixteen thousand men.
 Lewis XI. alarmed at the presence of so warlike
 and powerful a monarch as Edward, proposed an
 accommodation, and a truce was concluded on
 terms by no means honourable to France. Lewis
 stipulated to pay the king of England, immedi-
 ately, seventy-five thousand crowns, on condition
 that he should withdraw his army, and fifty thou-
 sand a year during their joint lives.

The most honourable article on the side of
 Lewis, was the stipulation for the liberty of queen
 Margaret. Lewis paid fifty thousand crowns for
 her ransom; and this princess, who had experi-
 enced such a variety of fortune in the active scenes
 of life, passed the remainder of her days in tran-
 quility and privacy.

The

The duke of Clarence, by all his services in deserting Warwick, had never been able to regain the king's friendship. He had also the misfortune to offend his brother Gloucester, who secretly conspired his ruin. Several of his friends were accused and executed under frivolous pretences, in hopes that his resentment would betray him into measures which might furnish matter for an impeachment. He fell into the snare: the king ordered him to be committed to the tower; and he was sentenced to die by the supreme tribunal of the nation. The only favour which the king granted him, was the choice of his death; and he was privately drowned by his own desire, in a butt of Malmsey.

The remaining part of Edward's reign was distinguished by no remarkable events. He died of a violent distemper, in the forty-second year of his age. As a man, he possessed many accomplishments; his virtues were few, his vices almost the whole catalogue. A. D.
1483.

Edward left two sons, the prince of Wales, now Edward V. in his thirteenth year, and Richard, duke of York, in his ninth. The duke of Gloucester, their uncle, whose sanguinary disposition we have had occasion to take notice of, was appointed regent by Edward's desire, and chosen protector by his own artifice. He had already got the two young princes into his possession, and his eyes was fixed upon the throne,

CHAP. throne, though not only the sons of Edward,
XXXII. but those of the duke of Clarence stood between
 him and it.

That he might remove every obstruction, he ordered the earl of Rivers, the queen's brother, to be thrown into prison, and executed without any form of trial. His next step was to draw into his views the duke of Buckingham and lord Hastings. With the first he succeeded; but the last remained firm in his allegiance to the children of Edward. His death was therefore resolved upon; and for that purpose a council was summoned in the tower, whither that nobleman, suspecting no harm, repaired without hesitation.

Gloucester, on taking his place at the council-board, appeared in the easiest and most facetious manner imaginable; but making a pretence soon after to retire, he returned knitting his brows, and shewing, by frequent alterations of his countenance, some inward perturbations. "What punishment do they deserve," said he, "who have conspired against my life?" "The death of a traitor," replied lord Hastings. "These traitors," cried Richard, "are the forcerefs my brother's wife, Jane Shore, with others their associates! See to what a condition they have reduced me by their spells and incantations!" laying bare his arm all shrivelled and decayed. The amazement of the council

council was encreased ; it being well known this infirmity had attended him from his childhood. CHAP
XXXII.

“ Certainly,” said lord Hastings, “ if they are
“ guilty of such a crime, they deserve punish-
“ ment.” “ And do you,” exclaimed Richard,
“ reply to me with your ifs ? you are yourself a
“ traitor ; and I swear by St. Paul, that I will
“ not dine before your head be brought to me.”
He struck the table with his hand ; armed men
rushed in at the signal ; Hastings was seized,
hurried away, and instantly beheaded on a log
of wood which accidentally lay in the court-yard
of the tower.

After the murder of Hastings, Richard no longer made a secret of his intentions to usurp the crown. As a colour to his pretensions, he not only maintained that his two nephews were illegitimate, but also his two brothers, Edward IV. and the duke of Clarence. He procured an assembly of the citizens of London at Guildhall, where the duke of Buckingham addressed them in an elegant harangue, setting forth the title and virtues of the protector ; and, “ God save
“ king Richard” was at last returned by the mob. The sentiments of the nation were now sufficiently declared : the voice of the people was the voice of God. Richard was prevailed upon, though with seeming reluctance, to accept of the crown ; and he henceforth acted as legitimate and lawful sovereign.

This

CHAP. This ridiculous farce was soon followed by a
 XXXII, scene truly tragical; the murder of the two
 young princes. The tyrant employed Sir James
 Tyrrel to execute this barbarous commission.
 Tyrrel hired three ruffians, whom he conducted
 about midnight to the apartment of the princes,
 and had them suffocated with bolsters and pillows.
 Their bodies were buried at the foot of the
 stair-case under a heap of ruins.

Richard having thus extirpated all whom he
 feared might disturb his government, endeavoured
 to gain, by favour, those whom he
 thought could give stability to his throne. Several
 noblemen received new honours, and lord
 Stanley, who had been confined, was set at liberty,
 and made steward of the household. But Richard's
 danger arose from a quarter whence he least
 expected it. The duke of Buckingham did not
 think himself sufficiently rewarded for his past
 services, in promoting the usurpation; he observed
 the general detestation, he therefore turned his
 eyes towards the young earl of Richmond, now
 an exile in Brittany, as the only person capable
 of forcing the nation from the tyranny under
 which it groaned.

Henry earl of Richmond, was grandson of Sir
 Owen Tudor, and Catharine of France, relict of
 Henry V. By his mother he was descended from
 John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, son of
 Edward III. and in order to strengthen his interest,

terest, a match was concerted between him and Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward IV. CHAP.
XXXII.

But so extensive a conspiracy could not escape the jealous and vigilant eye of Richard. He soon received intelligence of the duke of Buckingham's designs, and had that nobleman arrested, condemned, and executed. Meantime Richmond appeared on the coast of England with a body of five thousand men ; but hearing of the fate of Buckingham, he returned to the coast of Brittany. But he soon resolved upon a new invasion. All men of probity and honour, he was assured, were earnest to prevent the sceptre from being any longer polluted by that bloody and faithless hand which held it. In consequence of this opinion, he set sail from Harfleur, in Normandy, with a retinue of about two thousand men, and landed in Milford Haven, in Wales. The welch, who considered him as their countryman, flocked to his standard, and his cause immediately wore a favourable aspect.

Richard, who knew not in what quarter he might expect the invader, had taken post at Nottingham, in the center of the kingdom ; but the danger to which he was chiefly exposed, proceeded from the infidelity of his pretended friends. Scarce any nobleman was attached to his cause, except the duke of Norfolk ; and some who had feigned the greatest loyalty, were only watching for a favourable opportunity to
betray

CHAP. betray and abandon him. Among these was
 XXXII. lord Stanley. He had raised a powerful body
 of his friends and retinue, but without openly
 declaring himself; his son being in the tyrant's
 power. The two armies met at Bosworth, near
 A. D. Leiceſter. Henry's army conſiſted of ſix thou-
 1485. ſand men, Richard's of double that number;
 and he haſtened to decide by arms the quarrel
 with his competitor.

Soon after the battle began, lord Stanley appeared in the field, and declared for the earl of Richmond. The intrepid tyrant now ſenſible of his deſperate ſituation, and deſcrying his rival at no great diſtance, attempted to decide the victory by a blow. He killed, with his own hand, Sir William Brandon, ſtandard-bearer to the earl; he diſmounted Sir John Cheney, and though ſurrounded by his enemies, and overwhelmed by numbers, he ſtill maintained the combat; and at laſt ſunk amid heaps of ſlain, who had fallen by his arm. A life ſo infamous did not merit ſo glorious a death.

This battle was entirely deciſive; not only the king was ſlain, but the whole royal army totally routed and diſperſed. The victorious troops, in a tranſport of joy, beſtowed on their general the appellation of king; and, “long live Henry the ſeventh,” was reſounded from all quarters, with repeated acclamations: his title was confirmed by the parliament; and his marriage with
 the

the princess Elizabeth, which took place soon after, united the jarring claims of the houses of York and Lancaster. Thus ended the race of plantagenets, who sat upwards of three hundred years on the throne of England, and thus the civil wars, which had so long defoliated the kingdom.

CHAP.
XXXII.

C H A P. XXXIII.

France, from the Expulsion of the English, by Charles VII. to the Invasion of Italy, by Charles VIII.

CHAP. XXXIII. **W**HILE England was torn in pieces by civil wars, France was encreasing both in power and dominion. Charles VII. had reunited most of the great fiefs to the crown; he established a considerable military force, and the finances were able to support it. These measures were followed by the most important consequences. An army always at command gave vigour to the royal authority: the possessors of fiefs were no longer called upon; they no longer had any pretence for arming their followers to disturb the peace of the state; the feudal policy went rapidly to decay in France, and Charles beheld himself at the head of the largest and best regulated kingdom in Europe.

But all the wisdom and generosity of this great monarch could not secure him that happiness which he endeavoured to procure for his subjects. His son Lewis revolted, and embittered his days with sorrow; and brought him to an untimely grave. Informed that the prince intended taking him off by poison, he abstained from

from all food, till it was too late; and literally died of hunger, lest his unnatural son should be guilty of parricide. CHAP. XXXIII.

Lewis XI. so much celebrated as a politician, and despised as a man, now succeeded to that crown, which he had traiterously attempted to seize, in prejudice to the best of kings and fathers. His leading object was the aggrandizement of the monarchy, by depressing the power of the nobles, and by uniting the great fiefs to the crown. Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy, suspecting Lewis's intentions, assembled all his forces; but Lewis, who hated coming to extremities, agreed to pay the duke thirty-six thousand crowns towards his military expence, and appointed a personal interview at Peronne, in Picardy, then in possession of Charles. The proposal was agreed to, and the king went to the place of meeting, accompanied only by a few domestics. By such an act of confidence, he hoped to throw Charles off his guard, and to take advantage, during their conference, of that friendly temper which he had inspired. As a further means of forwarding his negotiation, he commanded some of his emissaries to enter Liege, and persuade the inhabitants to revolt against their duke. A. D. 1461.

Thus wrapt in perfidy and deceit, Lewis thought himself sure of concluding an advantageous treaty. He was deceived, however, for once. Intelligence arrived, that the people of

CHAP. Liege had broke out into open rebellion, at the
 XXXIII. instigation of the french emissaries, and had cut

the garrison in pieces. Charles, transported with rage, ordered the king to be shut up in a castle, and made him sensible that he was a prisoner at his mercy. He enlarged him only upon condition, that he should march with him against

A. D. Liege, and be active in the reduction of that
 1468. place, which had revolted at his own request.

Liege was reduced ; and Lewis was not permitted to depart, before the duke set fire to the town, and massacred the inhabitants. The future part of Lewis's reign was one continued scene of executions, wars, and negociations. His brother, Charles, who had been always a thorn in his side, was taken off by poison. The constable de St. Paul, his brother-in-law, the count of Armagnac, the dukes of Alencon and Nemours, lost their heads on the scaffold ; and the children of the last named nobleman, by an unheard of piece of barbarity, were sprinkled with their father's blood, yet reeking from his veins, and sent to the Bastile.

The ignominious treaty of Lewis with Edward IV. by which he purchased the retreat of that monarch, has been already mentioned. He was always engaged either in war or negociation, with his natural enemy the duke of Burgundy, till the
 A. D. death of that prince, who justly fell in an ambi-
 1477. tious and unprovoked attempt upon the liberty
 of

of the swiss. The duke left no male issue, and but one daughter, the sole heiress of his extensive dominions; which comprehended not only the dutchy of Burgundy, but Franche Compte, Artois, Flanders, and almost all Holland. Lewis proposed a marriage between this princess, and his son, Charles, the dauphin, a boy only of seven years of age. In the mean time he seized Burgundy as a male fief, and made himself master of Artois, Besancon, and several other places, as lying conveniently for him. This was the way to make sure of something; but surely not to bring about a marriage treaty. His capacity once more betrayed him. The princess Mary was filled with diffidence, and her flemish subjects with detestation. By their advice she married Maximilian, of Austria, son of the emperor Frederick III. and hence arose new wars, and an implacable hatred between the houses of France and Austria.

Lewis retained Burgundy, and all the other places he had seized. Anjou, Maine, Provence, and Bar, were soon after left him by Charles, count du Maine, the last prince of the house of Anjou, who died without issue. Thus Lewis, amid all his crimes, and after all his struggles, saw his kingdom much enlarged, his subjects in obedience, and his government revered at home and abroad. But he had only a glimpse of the agreeable prospect: for he was suddenly seized with a

CHAP.
XXXIII.

CHAP. fit of the apoplexy, which threw him into a lin-
 XXXIII } gering condition; and he expected death with all
 those horrors, which a life of such complicated
 A. D. guilt deserved. It at last overtook him, but not
 1483. before he had suffered more tortures than any cri-
 minal condemned under his reign. Yet this
 prince, whose life was a jumble of crimes and
 contradictions, obtained the title of *Most Christian*
Majesty.

Lewis was succeeded by his son, Charles VIII.
 as yet in the fourteenth year of his age. He was
 no longer a minor by the law, but he was still so
 by nature; and Lewis had wisely entrusted the
 government, during the youth of the king, to
 his daughter Anne, lady Beaujeu, a woman of
 great capacity. The administration, however,
 was disputed by the duke of Orleans, first prince
 of the blood, and afterwards the celebrated
 Lewis XII. who proving unsuccessful in his in-
 trigues, betook himself to arms, and entered into
 a league with the duke of Brittany, and the arch-
 duke Maximilian. The britons were defeated in

A. D. the battle of St. Auben, and the duke of Or-
 1483. leans was taken prisoner.

The death of the duke of Brittany, which
 happened soon after his defeat, threw the affairs
 of the duchy into the utmost confusion, and
 seemed to threaten the state with final subjection.
 It was the only great fief which now remained
 disunited from the crown of France. As the
 duke

duke had died without male heirs, some antiquated claims were revived by Charles to its dominions. The britons turned their eyes towards Maximilian of Austria, now king of the romans, whose wife, Mary of Burgundy, was lately dead, and offered him their dutchess in marriage. The proposal was readily accepted, the nuptials were celebrated by proxy, and the dutchess of Brittany assumed the august title of queen of the romans. But this honour was all she gained by her marriage. Maximilian, destitute of money and troops, was able to send no succours to his comfort. The french made progress every day; yet still the conquest of Brittany seemed so distant, and accompanied with so many difficulties, that the court of France changed its measures, and by a master stroke of policy astonished all Europe.

Charles VIII. had been affianced to Margaret, daughter of Maximilian; though too young for the nuptial union, she had been sent to Paris to be educated, and at this time bore the title of queen of France. Engagements so solemnly entered into could not easily be set aside; but the marriage of Charles with the dutchess of Brittany seemed necessary to re-annex that important fief to the crown. The only method to attain this object, was the dissolution of the two marriages, which had been celebrated, but not consummated, and the espousal of the dutchess

CHAP.
XXXIII.

CHAP. of Brittany by the king of France. But the
 XXXIII. great difficulty, was how to obtain the consent of
 the dutchess, who had fixed her affections on
 Maximilian. In order to subdue her obstinacy,
 the duke of Orleans was set at liberty; and
 though formerly her suitor, and favoured with
 her smile, he zealously employed all his interest
 in favour of the king. By his advice, Charles
 advanced with a powerful army to Rennes, at
 A. D. that time the residence of the dutchess; who
 1491. finding herself without resource, opened the gates
 of the city, and agreed to the proffered marriage,
 which was soon after solemnized, and justly con-
 sidered as the most fortunate event that could have
 befallen the french monarchy.

Henry VII. king of England, vexed with
 himself for leaving his most useful ally so long
 exposed to the invasion of a superior power, en-
 tered into a league with the king of the romans
 and the king of Spain. He obtained large sup-
 plies from his parliament; and he landed in
 France with one of the largest and appointed ar-
 mies which had ever been transported from Eng-
 land.

Charles, and his ministers, found means to di-
 vert the impending storm, by dissolving the con-
 federacy. They restored Roussillon and Cer-
 daigne to the king of Spain. Henry was bought
 off by the famous treaty of Estaples. Maximilian
 obtained restitution of Artois, Franche
 Comte,

Compte, and Charalois, which had been ceded CHAP.
XXXIII.
as the dowry of his daughter, when she was affianced to the king of France.

Charles's motives for purchasing peace at so high a price, were neither those of indolence or timidity, but of ambition and youthful ardour. He determined to vindicate his title to the kingdom of Naples, supposed to be descended to him from the house of Anjou, which ended in Charles count of Maine, who had bequeathed all his rights and possessions to the crown of France. This project had long engaged the mind of Charles; but in order to carry it into execution, it was necessary to be at peace with his neighbours; and that being effected, he now set out for Italy, with as little concern, as if it had been a journey of pleasure. But before we speak of that expedition; several important matters merit our attention; the taking Constantinople by the turks, and the expulsion of the moors out of Spain,

A. D.
1494.

C H A P. XXXIV.

The taking of Constantinople by the Turks, and Fall of the Greek Empire.

CHAP. XXXIV. **O**THMAN, from whom the present sultans are descended, and to whom the Ottoman empire owes its birth, fixed the seat of his government at Prusa, in Bithynia, about the beginning of the fourteenth century. Amurath, the grandson of Othman, at the head of the turkish army, crossed the streights of Callipolis, and took the city of Adrianople. He was succeeded by his son Bajazet, surnamed the Thunderbolt, on account of the rapidity of his conquests. The greeks, though surrounded by such dangerous enemies, and though their empire was almost reduced to the boundaries of Constantinople, were not more united among themselves than formerly. John Paleologus had condemned his son Andronicus, to lose his eyes. * Andronicus revolted against his father, and shut him up in prison.

In the mean time the progress of the turks in Europe, alarming the Christian princes, they took arms; the main body, which consisted of about one hundred thousand men of different nations, was commanded by Sigismund, king of Hungary, afterwards emperor. Bajazet drew them into an ambuscade, and gained a complete victory over them. He laid siege to Constantinople, and its ruin seemed inevitable; when it was put off
for

for a time, by one of those great events, which fill the world with confusion. CHAP.
XXXIV.

Tamerlane, or Timor Beck, one of the princes of the mogul tartars, and a descendant of Genghiz-Kan by the female line, though born without dominions, subdued almost as great an extent of territory as his victorious ancestor; and in the sweep of his conquests gave a blow to the empire of the turks. He had subdued Persia, India, and Syria; when the greek emperor, and five mahometan princes, whom the sultan had striped of their dominions, invited him into Asia minor, as the only potentate able to deliver them from the tyranny of Bajazet.

Tamerlane was no doubt glad of an opportunity of extending his conquests and his renown: he therefore marched against Bajazet, who raised the siege of Constantinople, and prepared to face his rival. They met near Cæsaria, where all the forces in the world seemed to be assembled; and a great and terrible battle was fought. Bajazet himself was taken prisoner, and had the affliction to see one of his sons fall by his side; and another, the companion of his chains. They were treated with great humanity by the victor, notwithstanding the vulgar story of the iron cage, in which the sultan is said to have been shut up. The turks were for many years happily diverted from Constantinople, by their wars in Hungary, where Amurath II. found an antagonist worthy of himself,

A. D.
1402.

CHAP. himself, in the celebrated John Hunniades, vay-
 XXXIV. vode of Transilvania, and general to Ladislaus VI.
 king of Poland, whom the hungarians had raised to their throne. This great commander obliged the sultan to raise the siege of Belgrade, defeated him in a general engagement, and made him sue for peace. Amurath and Ladislaus accordingly concluded a solemn truce for two years ; to which the one swore upon the alcoran, and the other upon the gospels ; and the sultan tired of the toils of empire, resigned the sceptre to his son Mahomet II. But an atrocious perfidity, disgraceful to the christian name, obliged him to resume it, to the confusion of his enemies.

The turks resting on the faith of treaty, which they religiously observed, had carried their forces into Asia. This seemed a favourable opportunity of attacking them on the side of Europe, and cardinal Julian Cesarini, the pope's legate in Germany, a man of violent and deceitful character, persuaded Ladislaus that the treaty with the turks was of no obligation, as it had been concluded without the consent of his holiness ; and that it not only might, but ought to be violated. The pope confirmed this opinion ; ordered the truce to be broke ; and released Ladislaus from his oath ; according to the established practice of the church of Rome, for several ages, and in conformity with the maxim, " that no faith is to be kept with heretics," and consequently not with infidels : one
 of

of the most pernicious doctrines ever devised by man ; a doctrine which not only contradicts the first principle of reason and conscience, but which, if carried into practice, must destroy all moral and political order. It would authorize enemies to sport even with oaths ; it would put an end to public faith ; it would dissolve the links of society ; and substitute robbery and bloodshed, instead of the laws of nations and the ties of duty.

CHAP.
XXXIV.

The arguments of the pope and his legate however prevailed ; and Ladislaus, seduced by false hopes, and influenced by false principles, invaded the sultan's territories. The turks, enraged at such a breach of faith, breathed nothing but vengeance. They requested Amurath to quit his retreat, and put himself at their head. He consented ; and marched in quest of the christian army, which he came up with, near the city of Varna, and defeated with great slaughter. Ladislaus fell with his sword in his hand, all covered with wounds ; cardinal Julian sunk by his side. Amurath, thus victorious, resigned once more the rod of empire. What a rare example of philosophy in a turk ! and was again obliged to resume it.

A. D.
1444.

The person who drew the sultan a second time from his retreat, was George Castriot, surnamed Scanderberg, the son of a prince of Albania. This young hero had been delivered as a hostage on the

the

CHAP. the subjection of his father's kingdom ; had been
XXXIV. educated in the court of Amurath, and had risen
 into favour by his valour and talents. But he
 still cherished the idea of becoming one day the de-
 liverer of his country ; and a favourable oppor-
 tunity at last offered. He had been sent with the
 command of an army into Servia, when he heard
 of his father's death ; and as he understood a se-
 cretary of the court was to pass near his camp, he
 caused him to be seized, loaded with chains, and
 compelled him to sign and put the sultan's signet
 to an order, enjoining the governor of Croia, the
 capital of Albania, to deliver up the town and ci-
 tadel to Scanderberg. This false order had the
 desired effect ; the place was delivered up, and
 Scanderberg massacred the turkish garrison. The
 albanians crowded to his standard, and he made
 so good an use of the mountainous situation of his
 country, as to defy all the efforts of the ottoman
 power.

Amurath died in 1451, and was succeeded by
 his son Mahomet II. surnamed the Great ; the
 first enterprize of this prince was against Constan-
 tinople, which had so long been the object of the
 ambition of his ancestors. The greek emperor
 John Paleologus II. was succeeded by his son
 Constantine : it was in this prince's reign, that
 Mahomet undertook the siege of Constantinople.

A. D. The garrison defended the walls with great gal-
 1453. lantry ; and the turks were incapable of annoy-
 ing

ing them from the sea, by reason of large chains and beams which secured the mouth of the harbour. In order to overcome this difficulty, Mahomet caused a passage of near two leagues to be dug over land, in the form of a cradle, and lined with planks, besmeared with grease; and with the help of engines, and a prodigious number of men, he drew up in the space of one night, eighty gallies, and seventy vessels of a smaller size, out of the water upon these planks, and launched them all in the harbour. The city was now assailed on all sides; the walls were beat down faster than the besieged could repair them; the janizaries entered the breach, with Mahomet at their head; the emperor Constantine was slain among the crowd, and his capital became a prey to the conqueror. But for the honour of Mahomet, it must be observed, that few of the garrison were put to the sword. He arrested the fury of his troops, and granted conditions to the inhabitants, who had sent deputies to implore his clemency. Mahomet continued to push his conquests on all sides, and with unvaried fortunes, till he received a check from John Hunniades, who obliged him to raise the siege of Belgrade. The knights of Rhodes, at present of Malta, opposed him in their island with the like success; but he subdued Albania. After the death of Scanderberg, he carried his arms as far as Trieste; took Otranto, and fixed the mahometan power in

CHAP.
XXXIV.

CHAP. in the heart of Calabria: he threatened Venice;
 XXXIV. and Rome itself, with subjection; hoping to
 { make himself master of Italy, as well as Greece;
 and then the triumph of barbarism would have
 been complete. All Europe trembled at his mo-
 tions, and well it might; for Europe, unless
 A. D. united, must have sunk beneath his sword. But
 1461. death freed christendom from this terrible con-
 queror, in the fifty-first year of his age. His de-
 scendants, however, still possess the finest country
 in our quarter of the globe. Greece, where civil
 liberty was first known, and arts and letters first
 brought to perfection, continues to be the seat of
 ignorance, barbarism, and despotism.

C H A P. XXXV.

Spain, from the Death of Peter the Cruel, till the Conquest of Granada, by Ferdinand and Isabella.

PETER the Cruel, after being deserted by the Black Prince, was subdued and slain by his bastard brother, Henry, count of Trastamara, who succeeded to the throne of Castile. Nothing remarkable happened during the reign of this prince, or under his descendant's, for almost a century. They were engaged in wars with their neighbours, the kings of Portugal and Arragon; so that Spain continued nearly in the same situation, till the reign of Henry IV. of Castile, whose debaucheries raised the resentment of the nobles, and produced an insurrection, which led to his deposition. The manner in which it was executed was rather singular. All the malcontent nobility, with the archbishop of Toledo at their head, met at Avila; an image, representing the king, was seated on the throne; clad in royal robes, with a crown on its head, a sceptre in its hand, and the sword of justice by its side. The accusation against Henry was read, and the sentence of deposition pronounced, in presence of a numerous assembly. At the close of the first article of the charge, the crown was torn from the head of the image; at the close

CHAP.
XXXV.

A. D.
1464.

CHAP. of the second, the sword of justice was snatched
XXXV. from its side ; at the close of the third, the sceptre
 was wrested from its hand ; and of the last, it was
 tumbled headlong from the throne. At the
 same instant, Don Alphonso, Henry's brother, a
 boy about twelve years of age, was proclaimed
 king of Castile and Leon, in his stead.

This extraordinary proceeding was followed
 by all the horrors of civil war, which did not
 cease till after the death of the young prince, on
 whom the nobles had bestowed the kingdom.
 The archbishop and his party, then continued to
 carry on the war, in the name of Isabella, the
 king's sister, to whom they gave the title of in-
 fanta ; and Henry could not extricate himself
 out of these troubles, till he had signed one of
 the most humiliating treaties ever extorted from
 a sovereign. He acknowledged his sister Isa-
 bella, the only lawful heiress of his kingdom, in
 prejudice to the rights of his daughter Joan,
 whom the malcontents affirmed to be the off-
 spring of an adulterous commerce, between the
 queen and Don la Ceueva. At such a price did
 this weak prince purchase from his subjects the
 empty title of king.

The grand object of this malcontent party now
 was the marriage of the princess Isabella. They
 fixed upon Ferdinand, king of Arragon, for her
 husband, and they were privately married by the
 archbishop of Toledo.

Henry

Henry affirmed in his last moments, that he believed, Joan to be his own daughter, and left a testamentary deed, transmitting the crown to this princess; but the superior power of Ferdinand and Isabella prevailed, and Joan retired to a convent.

CHAP.
XXXV.

A. D.
1474.

Ferdinand and Isabella were persons of great prudence; their first object was the regulation of their government, which the civil wars had thrown into the greatest disorder. These evils they remedied by their wise policy. The kingdom of Granada, now alone remained of all the mahometan possessions in Spain. Ferdinand and Isabella, therefore, thinking to increase their hereditary dominions, by expelling the enemies of christianity, entered Granada at the head of their troops, carried every thing before them, and at length undertook the siege of Granada, the capital of the kingdom. Abdalli, the moorish king, made a gallant defence; but all communication with the country being cut off, and all hopes of relief at an end, he capitulated, after a siege of eight months. Thus ended the empire of the arabs in Spain, after it had continued about eight hundred years.

A. D.
1479.

A. D.
1491.

The conquest of Granada was followed by the expulsion, or rather pillage and banishment of the jews, who had engrossed all the wealth and commerce of Spain. About the same time their catholic majesties concluded an alliance with the

CHAP. emperor Maximilian, and a treaty of marriage
XXXV. for their daughter Joan, with his eldest son Philip,
archduke of Austria, and sovereign of the Netherlands. About this time, also, the contract was concluded with Christopher Columbus for the discovery of the new countries. But the consequences of these things must be the subject of a future chapter. We must now return to the affairs of England under Henry VII.

C H A P. XXXVI.

England during the Reign of Henry VII.

HENRY VII. the first prince of the house of Tudor, ascended the throne of England, in consequence of the victory at Bosworth, and the death of Richard III. His title was confirmed by parliament, and his marriage with the princess Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward IV. united the jarring claims of the houses of York and Lancaster; he had every reason, therefore, to promise himself peace and security.

CHAP.
XXXVI.

But Henry had unhappily imbibed a violent antipathy against the adherents of the house of York, which no time or experience were ever able to efface. Hence his amiable consort was treated with contempt, his government grew unpopular, and his reign was filled with trouble and insurrections.

The first insurrection, headed by lord Lovel, and Sir Humphery Stafford, was soon dispersed by the duke of Bedford. Lovel fled to Flanders, and Stafford was taken and executed. This rebellion was immediately followed by another of a more dangerous nature, as it laid deeper hold of the public discontents. Henry's jealousy confined in the tower, Edward earl of Warwick,

CHAP. son of the duke of Clarence ; and while the na-
 XXXVI. tion was alarmed for the safety of this prince, a
 report was spread that he had made his escape. A general joy communicated itself from face to face, and so favourable an opportunity was not neglected by the enemies of Henry's government.

One Richard Simon, a priest of Oxford, and a zealous partizan of the house of York, attempted to gratify the popular wish, by holding up an impostor. For this purpose, he cast his eyes upon Lambert Simnel, a bakers son, who, being endowed with understanding above his years, and address above his condition, seemed well calculated to personate a prince of royal extraction. But as the imposture would not bear a close inspection father Simon determined to make a trial of it first in Ireland. The plot unfolded to their wishes ; Simnel was received with the utmost joy, and proclaimed king of Ireland.

A. D.
 1486.

The king was a good deal alarmed, when he received intelligence of this revolt. The queen dowager, whom he suspected of being concerned in the conspiracy, was confined in a nunnary for life. Henry, next ordered Warwick to be taken from the tower, and exposed to the view of the whole people. This expedient had its effect in England ; but in Ireland the people still persisted in their revolt.

King Simnel being now joined by lord Lovel, and some German troops he brought over with him,

him, resolved to pass over to England ; and accordingly landed in Lancashire, expecting the country would rise and join him ; but in this he was deceived. The people, averse to join a body of irish and german invaders, and kept in awe by the king's reputation in arms, remained in tranquility. The earl of Lincoln, who commanded the rebels, finding no hopes but in victory, determined to bring the matter to a speedy decision. The two armies met at Stokes, where a bloody and obstinate battle was fought. The rebels, at length, were obliged to give way ; Lincoln perished in the field of battle ; Simnel and his tutor Simon were taken prisoners. Simon was committed to close custody for life ; Simnel was too contemptible, either to excite apprehension or resentment in Henry ; he was pardoned, and employed in the king's kitchen as a scullion.

CHAP.
XXXVI.

Henry, having thus restored tranquility to his kingdom, and security to his government, had leisure to look abroad. France, for some years past, had a mighty increase of power and dominion, and had lately annexed Brittany, the last independent fief of the monarchy. Henry, who saw the importance of Brittany to France, was now ashamed of having allowed his most useful ally to be crushed by a superior power. All remedy for his miscarriage was now become impracticable, but he talked loudly of vengeance ;

CHAP. and set out for that purpose, at the head of a
 XXXVI. splendid army, after obtaining large supplies
 from his parliament. However, as avarice was
 in Henry a more powerful motive than either
 revenge or glory, he engaged, by the treaty of
 Eastaples, to leave the king of France in the
 peaceable possession of Brittany, for a stipulated
 sum of money, and an yearly pension to him and
 his heirs. The old duchess of Burgundy, sister
 A. D. of Edward IV. burning with resentment, on ac-
 1492. count of the depression of her family and her
 partizans, determined to play off another impostor
 upon Henry. With that view, she caused a re-
 port to be propagated, that her nephew, Richard
 Plantagenet, duke of York, had made his escape
 from the tower, when his eldest brother was
 murdered, and was still alive. Finding this ru-
 mour greedily received, her next care was to
 provide a young man proper to personate that
 unfortunate prince; and for that purpose, she
 fixed upon Perkin Warbec, the son of a rene-
 gado jew of Tournay. The young jew enjoyed
 the fruits of his imposture much longer than his
 predecessor, the baker: a majestic air, a finished
 breeding, and great personal courage, seemed to
 make him worthy of the rank he assumed.
 James IV. king of Scotland, was so far deceived
 by his insinuating address and plausible behavi-
 our, as to give him in marriage the lady Catha-
 rine Gordon, daughter of the earl of Huntly, a
 young

young lady eminent both for beauty and virtue. CHAP. XXXVI.
 Perkin maintained his claim by arms for five years, and met with unexpected resources, even in the midst of his defeats. But being at length abandoned by his party, and delivered to the king; Henry had the clemency to condemn him only to perpetual imprisonment, from which in attempting to make his escape, he was seized, and paid for his rashness with his life. A. D. 1499.

Henry, having restored tranquility to his kingdom, projected a marriage between Arthur, prince of Wales, and the infanta Catherine, fourth daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella: he, near sixteen years of age, she eighteen. But this marriage proved unprosperous. Prince Arthur died a few months after the celebration of the nuptials; and the king, desirous to continue his alliance with Spain, and also unwilling to restore Catharine's dowry, obliged his second son Henry, whom he created prince of Wales, to be contracted to the infanta, an event productive of the most important consequences. A. D. 1502.

Another marriage was also celebrated the same year, which, in the next age, gave birth to great events; the union of Margaret; Henry's eldest daughter, with James IV. of Scotland. When this alliance was deliberated on, in the english council, some objected, that England might, in consequence of this marriage, fall under the dominion of Scotland. "No;" replied Henry,

P 4

"though

CHAP. “ though Scotland should give an heir to the
XXXVI. “ crown, that kingdom will only become an ac-
“ cession to England ;” and the event has proved
the justice of the observation.

Nothing material occurred in the remaining part of Henry's life. He died in the fifty-second year of his age, and the twenty-third of his reign ; which was, on the whole, fortunate for his people at home, and honourable abroad.

C H A P. XXXVII.

*A general view of the Continent of Europe, from the
Invasion of Italy, by Charles VIII. till the League
of Cambray.*

CHARLES VIII. having married the heiress of Brittany, as it has already been observed, and purchased peace from his neighbours, set out on his favourite project, the conquest of Naples, to which he had pretensions, as heir of the house of Anjou. The army with which he undertook this great enterprize, did not exceed twenty thousand men; yet with these he was able to over-run all Italy. The italians, who had entirely lost the use of arms, and who, amid continual wars, had become every day more unwarlike, were astonished to meet an enemy, that made the field of battle not a pompous tournament, but a scene of blood. They were terrified at the aspect of real war, and shrunk on its approach. Pope Alexander VI. of infamous memory, the venetians, and Ludovico Sforza, surnamed the Moor, duke of Milan, who had invited Charles into Italy, alarmed at his progress, which was equally unwished and unexpected, endeavoured to throw obstacles in his way, almost as soon as he had crossed the Alps.

CHAP.
XXXVII.

A. D.
1494.

CHAP.
xxxvii.

All opposition, however, was in vain. Charles entered in triumph the city of Florence; he delivered Sienna and Pisa from the Tuscan yoke; he marched next to Rome, where Alexander VI. had ineffectually intrigued against him, and he took possession of that city as a conqueror. The pope had taken refuge in the castle of Saint Angelo; but he no sooner saw the french cannon pointed against its feeble ramparts, than he offered to capitulate; and it cost him only a cardinal's hat, to make his peace with the king. Charles, whose interest it was to have deposed the pope, forgave him, and repented of it afterwards.

Never pontiff, sure, more deserved the indignation of a christian prince. He, and the venetians, had applied to the turkish sultan, Bajazet II. son and successor of Mahomet II. to assist them in driving the french monarch out of Italy. It is also asserted, that the pope sent a nuncio to the court of Constantinople, and that the alliance between his holiness and the sultan was purchased by one of those inhuman murders, which are not committed without horror, even within the walls of the seraglio.

Alexander VI. by an extraordinary chain of events, had, at that time, in his possession, the person of Zizim, brother of Bajazet. The manner in which this unfortunate prince fell into the hands of the pope, is as follows :

Zizim,

Zizim, who was adored by the turks, had disputed the empire with Bajazet, and was defeated. CHAP.
XXXVII.
This unfortunate prince had recourse, in his distress, to the knights of Rhodes, now of Malta. They received him as a prince, to whom they were bound to afford protection by the laws of hospitality; but soon afterwards they treated him as a prisoner; and Bajazet agreed to pay them a stipulated sum of money annually, on condition that they should not suffer Zizim to return to Turkey. The knights conveyed him to one of their commanders, at Poitou, in France. Pope Innocent VIII. Alexander's predecessor, wanted to get possession of this valuable captive, as a pledge for the safety of Italy, against the attempts of the turks. Charles, therefore, sent him to the pope, who received him with all the splendor and magnificence, which the sovereign of Rome could shew to the brother of the sovereign of Constantinople. It is said, that Alexander VI. sold Zizim's life, in a treaty which he made with Bajazet. Be that as it may, the king of France, full of his vast projects, and certain of the conquest of Naples, wanted to become formidable to the sultan, by having the person of his unhappy brother in his power. The pope delivered him to Charles, but poisoned, as is supposed. It is at least certain, that he died soon after; and the character of Alexander makes it probable, that three hundred ducats, said to have been offered

CHAP. fered by Bajazet, was esteemed equivalent for
 XXXVII. such a crime.

A. D. Charles continued his progress towards Naples,
 1495. where Alphonso II. struck with terror, at the approach of the french army, gave the world an example of a new kind of cowardice and pusillanimity. He fled privately to Sicily, and took refuge in a cloister; while Ferdinand, his son, now become king by this abdication, finding himself unable to retrieve the public affairs, released his subjects from their oath of allegiance, and retired to the island of Ischa.

While Charles was thus successful in Naples, there was formed against him a powerful combination of almost all the italian states: the pope, the venetians, the duke of Milan, supported by the emperor Maximilian, and by their catholic majesties, Ferdinand and Isabella. This powerful confederacy awakened Charles from his thoughtless security. He saw no prospect of safety, but in returning to France.

A. D. The confederates had assembled an army of
 1496. thirty thousand men, in order to obstruct his march. Charles had only nine thousand men with him. The two armies met in the valley of Fornova, and the french gained a complete victory. The exiled Ferdinand, by the help of Gonfalso de Cordova, surnamed the Great Captain, recovered the whole kingdom of Naples.

Charles

Charles lived but two years after his return to France, and as he died without issue, was succeeded by the duke of Orleans, under the title of Lewis XII. to which was afterwards added the most glorious of all appellations, that of father of his people.

CHAP.
XXXVII.

A. D.
1498.

The claim of Lewis XII. to Naples, was the same of that of Charles VIII. and he demanded the duchy of Milan, in right of one of his grandmothers, daughter of John Visconte, first duke of that territory; he therefore determined to assert his claim with ardour, and he succeeded. But before we relate the particulars of this conquest, it will be necessary to say a few words of pope Alexander VI. and his son, Cæsar Borgia, on account of their alliance with the king of France, and the shares which they had in the wars of Italy,

Alexander VI. was at that time engaged in two great designs; one was to restore to the patrimony of Saint Peter, the many territories of which it was said to be deprived; and the other, was the exaltation of his son, Cæsar Borgia. Infamous as his conduct was, it did not impair his authority. He was publicly accused of a criminal correspondence with his own sister, whom he took away from three husbands, successively, and caused the last to be assassinated, that he might bestow her in marriage, on the heir of the house of Este. The nuptials were celebrated in
the

CHAP. the vatican, by the most shameful diversions that
XXXVII. debauch had ever invented for the confusion of
modesty. Fifty courtezans danced naked before
this incestuous family; and prizes were given to
those who exhibited the most lascivious mo-
tions.

The duke of Gandia, and Cesar Borgia, at that time cardinal and archbishop of Valentia, in Spain, are said to have publickly disputed the favours of their sister, Lucretia. The duke of Gandia was assassinated at Rome, and Cesar Borgia was the supposed author of the murder. The personal estates of the cardinals, at their decease, belongs to the pope; and Alexander was strongly suspected of hastening the death of more than one member of the sacred college, that he might become possessed of their treasures. But notwithstanding these enormities, the people of Rome obeyed, without murmuring; and this pontiff's friendship was courted by all the potentates in Europe.

Lewis XII. had many reasons for desiring the friendship of Alexander. He wanted to be divorced from his wife, Joan, with whom he had lived upwards of twenty years, without having children; and to marry Anne, of Brittany, the queen dowager, who still retained that tenderness, which she had felt for him, when duke of Orleans. Lewis, therefore, applied to Alexander VI. who never scrupled at any indulgence, in
which

which he could find his interest. The bull of divorce was issued, and Cæsar Borgia carried it to France, after making advantageous terms for himself. Matters were quickly settled between Lewis and the queen dowager; and the king prepared for a fresh invasion of Italy.

CHAP.
XXXVII.

A. D.
1499.

Lewis passed the Alps, at the head of only twenty thousand men; yet in the space of twenty days, the french made themselves masters of the state of Milan, and of Genoa. The king, clad in royal robes, entered the city of Milan, in triumph; and soon after the duke Ludovico Sforza, being betrayed by the swiss in his pay, was sent prisoner into France, and shut up in the castle of Loches, where he lay unpitied during the remainder of his days.

Lewis next turned his arms towards Naples; but as he foresaw opposition from Ferdinand, the catholick king, who was connected by affinity with Frederick, king of Naples; he endeavoured by offers of interest, to which the ears of that monarch were never deaf, to engage him in an opposite confederacy. A plan was accordingly settled for the expulsion of Frederick, and the partition of his dominions. Frederick, unable to resist the combined monarchs, resigned his sceptre. But he had the satisfaction to see Naples prove the source of contention among his conquerors. Lewis and Ferdinand, though they had

CHAP. had concurred in making the conquest, differed
 XXXVII. about the division of it; from allies, they be-
 came enemies; and Gonsalvo de Cordova, or the
 Great Captain, by the exertion of his military
 talents; and by such shameful and frequent vio-
 lations of the most solemn engagements, as leave
 an indelible stain upon his memory, stripped the
 french of all that they had possessed in the nea-
 politan dominions, and secured the entire posses-
 sion of them to his no less perfidious master.

A. D. 1503. Alexander VI. died about this time, and left
 behind him a more detestable memory in Europe,
 than Nero or Caligula had done in the roman
 empire. Cæsar Borgia, on his father's death,
 was stripped by pope Julius II. of all the fruits
 of his crimes, and abandoned by all the world.
 he fled for refuge to the king of Navarre, his fa-
 ther-in-law. This prince entered into a war, by
 the persuasion of Borgia, to dispossess his vassals
 of their estates; as this inhuman tyrant had rob-
 bed the vassals of the holy see. He was slain
 fighting. "A glorious end," says Voltaire; but
 it is surely only glorious to fall in a good cause,
 and Borgias was confessedly a bad one.

A. D. 1505. Lewis XII. made a new attempt to recover the
 kingdom of Naples; and was again disappointed
 by the ambition of his minister, Cardinal d'Am-
 boise, who sold his master's interest for a pro-
 mise of the papacy, which he never obtained.

During

During these transactions, Isabella, queen of Castile, died, and Philip of Austria went to take possession of that kingdom, as heir to his mother-in-law. He likewise died in a short time, and left the king of France governor of his son, Charles.

CHAP.
XXXVII.


C H A P. XXXVIII.

*Europe, from the League of Cambray to the Death of
Lewis XII.*

CHAP.
XXXVIII

JULIUS II. had formed the project of driving all foreigners out of Italy. But in the first place he was desirous of humbling the venetians, whose power and riches had arrived at such a pitch, by their commerce to the east, as to become the object of terror to the italian states : the wealth of this republic was viewed with envy by the greatest monarchs, who could not vie with her private citizens in the magnificence of their buildings, in the richness of their dress and furniture, or in the splendor and elegance of living ; and Julius II. whose ambition and abilities were equal to those of any pontiff who had ever sat on the papal throne, by working upon the fears of the italians, and upon the avarice of the princes beyond the Alps, induced them to form against this proud republic one of the most extensive confederacies that Europe had ever beheld.

A. D.
1508.

The emperor, the king of France, the king of Spain, and the pope, were principals in the league of Cambray, to which almost all the princes of Italy acceded, the least considerable of them hoping for some share in the spoils of a state which they already deemed to be devoted to destruction.

The

The venetians, after the battle of Agnadello, in which they were entirely defeated, sunk from the height of presumption to the depths of despair. They abandoned all their territories on the continent, and shut themselves up in their capital as their last refuge, and the only place which they hoped to preserve. Julius having thus humbled the venetians, which was his first design, began to think of the second, the expulsion of every foreign power out of Italy. For this purpose it was necessary to dissolve the league of Cambray, and sow dissention among those princes whom he had formerly united. He concluded an alliance with the venetians, against those very french whom he had called in to oppose them. He solicited the favour of Henry VIII. king of England: he detached Ferdinand from the league, and drew him over to his party, by granting him the full investitures of the kingdom of Naples; and what he chiefly valued, he formed a treaty with the swiss, whose subsidy Lewis had refused to augment, and whom he had offended by some contumelious expressions.

CHAP.
XXXVIII.

A. D.
1510.

The confederacy of Cambray being thus dissolved, the face of affairs soon began to wear a very different appearance in Italy. The pope and his allies attacked the french on every side, and at length drove them entirely out of the Milanese, and Maximilian Sforza, the son of Ludovico, was again re-instated in possession of that duchy.

CHAP.
xxxviii.

While Lewis was losing Milan, Ferdinand seized upon the dominions of the king of Navarre, the ally of France, which have ever since continued in the possession of the spaniards.

The discomfiture of the french gave much pleasure to the pope, who enjoyed this success but a short time. He was succeeded in the pontificate by John de Medicis, who took the name of Leo X. and proved one of the most illustrious princes that ever sat on the papal throne. Humane, generous, affable, the patron of every art, and the friend of every virtue: he had a soul no less capable of forming great designs than his predecessor: by his negotiation the emperor Maximilian was detached from the french interest, and Henry VIII. was persuaded to invade France.

A. D.
1513.

This young monarch, by his single strength, seemed in a condition to renew the times of Poitiers and Agincourt. He gained a complete victory at the battle of Guinegate, which is called the battle of the spurs. He took Terouane, and Tournay. The swiss at the same time had entered Burgundy with a formidable army; and Lewis de la Tremouille, governor of the province, could not get rid of these invaders, without paying them some money, and the promise of much more.

While Henry was employed on the continent, James IV. king of Scotland, invaded England at the head of a powerful army. The earl of Surrey having collected some troops, came up with him

at

at Flouden, where the king of Scotland was slain, and the flower of his nobility. CHAP.
XXXVIII.

Soon after the battle of Flouden, a general pacification took place between all the contending powers. Lewis espoused the princess Mary of England ; which he did not survive above three months. A. D.
1514.

CHAP. XXXIX.

A general View of Europe, continued from the Accession of Francis I. to the Death of the Emperor Maximilian.

CHAP. XXXIX. **L**EWIS XII. having no male issue, was succeeded on the throne of France by his son-in-law, Francis count of Angoulême, first prince of the blood. Young, brave, ambitious, and enterprising; he immediately turned his eyes towards Italy, as the scene of glory and conquest. His first object was the recovery of Milan. He therefore crossed the Alps, and defeated the swiss at Marignan, in one of the most furious and obstinate battles recorded in the history of the modern times: the swiss lost twelve thousand men, one half of their number; the loss of the french was considerable. The surrender of Milan, and the conquest of the entire dutchy, were the consequences of this victory. Maximilian Sforza, the reigning duke, resigned his claim, in consideration of a pension. Francis having concluded a treaty with the pope, and with the swiss, returned into France, leaving to Charles de Bourbon the government of his italian dominions.

A. D. 1515. Ferdinand the catholic died about this time, and his grandson Charles succeeded him. Charles, who had hitherto resided in the low countries, which

which he inherited as heir of the house of Burgundy, was now near the full age of sixteen, and possessed of a recollection and sedateness much above his years ; but his genius had yet given no indications of that superiority which his maturer age displayed.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

Cardinal Ximenes, a person of equal virtue and sagacity, had been appointed by the last will of Ferdinand, sole regent of Castile, till the arrival of his grandson. The young king was received with universal acclamations of joy ; but Ximenes found little cause to rejoice ; he received a letter from Charles soon after his arrival, genteelly dismissing him from his councils, under pretence of easing his age of that burden which he had so long and so ably sustained. This letter proved fatal to the minister : his haughty mind could not survive the disgrace, and he expired in a few hours after reading it.

While Charles was taking possession of the throne of Spain, in consequence of the death of one grandfather, another was endeavouring to obtain for him the imperial crown. With this view Maximilian assembled a diet at Augsburg, where he cultivated the favour of the electors, in order to engage them to chuse that young prince as his successor. But the diet of Augsburg had other business. Thither was summoned Martin Luther, for “ propagating new and dangerous opinions.” These opinions were no other than

A. D.
1518.

CHAP. the first principles of the reformation, which soon
XXXIX. diffused themselves through Germany, which
 were afterwards embraced by so many nations, and which separated one half of Europe from the romish church. The spiritual despotism of Gregory VII. the temporal tyranny of Alexander VI. and the bloody ambition of Julius II. make too strong an impression on the mind to be soon effaced. After that enormous privilege which the roman pontiffs assumed of disposing of crowns, and of releasing nations from their oaths of allegiance, the most pernicious to society was that of absolving individuals from the ties of moral duty. This dangerous power the pope claimed as the successor of St. Peter. He assumed and exercised the right of pardoning sins ; which was in other words granting permission to commit them ; for it is known at what price any crime may be bought off, the encouragement to vice is the same as if a dispensation had been granted beforehand, and even that was frequently practised,

Leo X. who was engaged in building that superb temple the church of St. Peter, published a general sale of indulgences, to support the great expence of such an undertaking. The abuse of the sale of these indulgences in Germany, where they were publicly retailed in ale houses, awaked the indignation of Martin Luther, an augustan friar, and professor of theology in the university of


of Wittemberg. Luther was also incensed, it is
 said, that the privilege of vending this spiritual
 merchandize had been taken from his order, and
 given to the dominicans. But be that as it may,
 he wrote and preached against indulgences. From
 abuses he proceeded to usurpations, and from u-
 surpations to errors; and from one error to an-
 other, till the whole fabric of the romish church
 began to totter.

CHAP.
 XXXIX.

Luther, who was protected by Frederick, elector
 of Saxony, repaired to Augsburg without hesita-
 tion. Cardinal Cajetan, the pope's legate, insisted
 that Luther should retract his errors, and abstain
 for the future from the publication of new and
 dangerous opinions. Martin boldly replied, that
 he could not with a safe conscience, renounce opi-
 nions which he believed to be true; but offered
 to submit the whole controversy to the judgment
 of the learned, naming certain universities. This
 offer was rejected by Cajetan, who still insisted on
 a simple recantation; and Luther, by the advice
 of his friends, secretly withdrew from Augsburg,
 and returned to his own country.

A. D.
 1519.

The diet of Augsburg was soon followed by
 the death of the emperor Maximilian; an event
 which left vacant the first station among christian
 princes, and gave rise to a competition between
 two great monarchs, which threw all Europe in-
 to agitation. But before we enter on that inter-
 esting

CHAP. resting æra, we must give some account of those
XXXIX.  great naval discoveries, which produced so important a revolution in the commercial world, and gave to Europe a new continent, while religion and ambition were depopulating the old.

CHAP. XL.

*The Discoveries of the Portuguese and the Spaniards
in the East and West Indies.*

THE kings of Portugal, like those of Spain, long spent their force in combating with the moors, and had no connection with the rest of Europe. A detail of those barbarous wars would be equally void of instruction and amusement; suffice it to say, that prince Henry of Portugal, son to king John I. began those naval discoveries, which afterwards tended to the aggrandizement of his country. He found some pilots bold enough to double cape Nore, hitherto supposed an insurmountable barrier, and advanced as far as cape Bajadore, and in their return discovered the islands of Madcira. Other pilots, yet more bold, were sent out, who doubled cape Bajadore, cape Blanco, cape Verd, and, at last, cape Sierra Lienna, within eight degrees of the line, before the death of prince Henry.

CHAP.
XL.

A. D.
1419.

Under the reign of John II. the portuguese prosecuted their discoveries with equal ardour and success; and at length, in 1486, doubled the extreme point of Africa, which they styled the Cape of Good Hope.

A D.
1463.

Emanuel I. pursued the great projects of his predecessors. He sent out a fleet of four ships,
under

CHAP. under the command of Vasco de Gama, a noble
 { **XL.** portuguese, in order to complete the passage to
 India by sea. This admiral, who possessed all the
 knowledge necessary for such an expedition,
 after being assailed by tempests, and ranging
 through unknown seas, happily arrived at the

A. D. city of Calicut, on the coast of Malabar.

1498. Nothing can express the joy of the portuguese on the return of Gama to Lisbon. They saw themselves in possession of the richest commerce in the world; they also flattered themselves with the prospect of extending their religion along with their dominions.

The pope further encouraged this hope, and granted the portuguese all the countries which they should discover in the east, on condition that they should there plant the catholic faith.

While the portuguese were thus employed in making acquisitions in the east, the Spaniards had discovered a new continent towards the west. They had called into existence, as it were, another world, opened new sources of trade, expanded new theatres of dominion, and displayed new scenes of ambition, of avarice, and of blood.

Christopher Columbus, a genoeſe navigator, who reſided at Lisbon, firſt conceived the idea of this new continent. The genoeſe, his countrymen, whom he propoſed to put in poſſeſſion of another hemisphere, treated him as a viſionary.

He

He unfolded his project, the grandest that human genius ever formed, to the courts of England and Portugal, without success. At last he laid it before the court of Spain; where he long suffered all that neglect and contempt which unsupported merit so often meets from men in office, who are too apt to despise what they do not understand.

CHAP.
XL.

At length Isabella seemed to sympathize with the bold spirit of Columbus. Three small vessels were fitted out by her orders; and Columbus set out on the 3d of August 1492, in quest of the western world.

The portuguese navigators, in their first discoveries, had always some reference to the coast. cape had pointed to them cape; but Columbus, with no land mark but the heavens, nor any guide but the compass, boldly launched into the ocean, without knowing what shore should receive him, or where he could find rest for the sole of his foot. His crew murmured, they mutined: they proposed to commit him to those waves with which he so wantonly sported, and return to Spain. At last, to the inexpressible joy of Columbus, he got sight of the Lucayo islands, which he took possession of in the name of their catholic majesties, and proceeded on his course. He next steered to the island of Cuba, and Hispaniola; on this latter he built a fort and planted a little colony; after which he returned to Spain, where

CHAP. where he was received with universal acclama-
 XL. tions of joy.

A. D. Columbus soon set sail again, with a fleet of
 1493. seventeen ships. He now made the discovery of the continent of America, near the mouth of the river Oroonoko; but he was unjustly deprived of the honour of this discovery. The merchants of Seville, having obtained permission to attempt discoveries, sent four ships under the command of Alonzo de Ojeda, assisted by Americus Vesputius, a florentine navigator. This fleet touched on that continent already discovered by Columbus; and Americus who was a man of much address, by publishing the first voyages on the subject, and other artful means, gave his name to the new world, in preference to the illustrious genoeſe.

This, however, was but a small misfortune in comparison of what Columbus was doomed to suffer. His enemies having prevailed at court, a new governor was sent to Hispaniola. He was put in irons and sent home in that condition.

A. D. The spanish ministry were ashamed of the se-
 1502. verity of their creature: Columbus was set at liberty, and a fourth command granted him for the prosecution of new discoveries. He touched at several parts of the American continent, and at length returned home, where he was received coldly. He retired to Valadolid, where he was
 suffered

suffered to fall a martyr to the ingratitude of that monarch, to whom he had given the West Indies, and for whom he had opened a passage into a richer and more extensive empire than was ever subdued by the roman arms.

CHAP.
XL.
}

C H A P. XLI.

A general view of the Affairs of Europe, from the Election of Charles V. to the Peace of Cambray.

CHAP. **T**HOUGH Maximilian could not prevail upon the German electors to chuse his grandson of Spain king of the romans, he had disposed their minds in favour of that prince ; and other circumstances, on the death of the emperor, conspired to the exaltation of Charles. The imperial crown had so long continued in the austrian line, that it began to be considered as hereditary in that family ; and Germany, torn by religious disputes, stood in need of a powerful emperor, not only to preserve its own internal tranquility, but also to protect it against the victorious arms of the turks, who, under Selim I. threatened the liberties of Europe.

Francis I. however, no sooner received intelligence of the death of Maximilian, than he declared himself a candidate for the empire ; and with no less confidence than Charles. He trusted to his superior years and experience ; his great reputation in arms, acquired by the victory at Marignan, and the conquest of Milan.

Charles .

Charles at length, was elected to the empire ; which circumstance gave rise to a jealousy and emulation between those two great monarchs, involved them in almost perpetual hostilities, and kept their whole age in movement.

Henry VIII. of England, was the third prince of the age in power and dignity ; his friendship was therefore eagerly courted by each of the rivals. This prince was at that time governed by cardinal Wolsey, his prime minister, a man, who, by his talents and accomplishments, had risen from one of the lowest conditions in life, to the highest employments both in church and state.

Francis solicited an interview with the king of England near Calais, in hopes of being able to attach him and his minister to his friendship and interest.

Charles, dreading the effects of this meeting, resolved, if possible to defeat its purpose. He therefore landed at Dover, in his way from Spain to the Low Countries. The king of England, charmed with such an instance of confidence, hastened to receive his royal guest ; and Charles, during his short stay, had the address, not only to give Henry favourable impressions of his character and intentions, but to detach Wolfsey entirely from the interest of Francis. The tiara had attracted the eye of that ambitious prelate,

R . and

CHAP. and the emperor had made him an offer of his
XLI. interest on the first vacancy.

The day of Charles's departure, Henry went over to Calais with his whole court, in order to meet Francis. Their interview was in an open plain, between Guisnes and Ardres; where the two kings and their attendants displayed their magnificence with such emulation and profuse expence, as procured it the name of the *field of the cloth of gold*.

Charles having secured the friendship of the king of England and his minister, repaired to Aix-la-Chapelle, where he was solemnly invested with the crown and sceptre of Charlemagne. About the same time, Solyman the Magnificent, one of the most accomplished, enterprising, and victorious of the turkish princes, and a constant and formidable rival to the emperor, ascended the ottoman throne.

Francis at length began this never ending quarrel, by seizing upon Navarre; his troops were hardly in possession of it, when they were expelled by the spaniards. Hostilities thus commenced in one quarter between the rival monarchs, soon spread to another. Charles entered France; but was repelled by the famous chevalier Bayard. Francis broke into the Low Countries, where he lost an opportunity of cutting off the whole imperial army.

During

During these operations of the field, a league was concluded by the intrigues of Wolfey, between the pope, Henry, and Charles, against France. The papal army, commanded by Colonna, drove the french entirely out of Italy. Leo X. received the account of this rapid success with such transports of joy, as, are said, to have brought on a fever, which occasioned his death.

CHAP.
XLI.
}

A. D.
1521.

Cardinal Adrian, Charles's preceptor, was unanimously raised to the papacy; and Wolfey's name, notwithstanding the emperor's promise, was scarcely mentioned in the conclave.

While the christian princes were wasting each other's strength, Solyman the Magnificent, entered Hungary, and made himself master of Belgrade. Encouraged by this success, he turned his victories against the island of Rhodes, at that time the seat of the knights of St. John, of Jerusalem. Lisle Adam, the grand master, made a gallant defence; but after incredible efforts of courage, patience, and military conduct, during a siege of six months, he was obliged to surrender the place, having obtained an honourable capitulation from the sultan, who admired and respected his heroic qualities. Charles granted the small island of Malta to the knights, where they fixed their residence, and continued long to retain their ancient spirit.

Meanwhile, the confederacy against France became more formidable than ever. The vene-

CHAP. tians, formed engagements with the emperor for
 XLI. { securing Francis Sforza in the possession of the
 duchy of Milan; the pope, the florentines, and
 all the italian powers acceded to the same al-
 liance. Francis was left without a single ally, to
 resist the efforts of a multitude of enemies, whose
 armies every way threatened him. The emperor,
 in person, menaced France with an invasion on
 the side of Guienne. The forces of England,
 and the Netherlands, hovered over Picardy, and
 a numerous body of germans was preparing to ra-
 vage Burgundy.

Francis, no way intimidated by so many pow-
 erful adversaries, assembled a great army, with
 which he hoped to disconcert all the emperor's
 schemes, by marching it in person into Italy.
 But the discovery of a domestic conspiracy,
 which threatened the destruction of his king-
 dom, obliged him to suspend his expedition.

Charles, duke of Bourbon, lord high constable of France, was a prince of the most shining merit. His great talents equally fitted him for the council or the field; while his eminent services to the crown entitled him to its first favour. Unhappily, these superior qualifications created a jealousy at court, where the constable received repeated affronts. Bourbon, about this time, became a widower; and Louisa, duchess of Angouleme, the king's mother, formed the scheme of marrying him. Her proposal was rejected;
 and

and Louisa, filled with all the rage of a disappointed woman, resolved to ruin the man she could not marry. For this purpose she commenced an iniquitous suit against him; and by the chicanery of chancellor Du Prat, the constable was stripped of his whole family estate. Driven to despair by so many injuries, he entered into a secret correspondence with the emperor and the king of England; and he proposed, as soon as Francis had crossed the Alps, to raise an insurrection among his vassals, and introduce foreign enemies into France.

CHAP.
XLI.
}

Happily, Francis got information of this conspiracy before he left the kingdom. Bourbon entered into the emperor's service, and employed all the force of his enterprising genius, to the prejudice of his prince and his native country.

In consequence of the discovery of this plot, Francis relinquished his intention of leading his army in person into Italy. He gave the command of it to admiral Bonnivet, a man destitute of the talents, which could render him a match for the imperial generals, Bourbon and Pescara; he was therefore quickly compelled to fly, and was defeated in his retreat, at Biagrasa. The famous chevalier Bayard, who, though he never commanded in chief, yet was truly deserving the surname of "the Knight without fear or reproach," was mortally wounded in this engagement. Charles, of Bourbon, seeing him in this

A. D.
1524.

CHAP. condition, expressed much sorrow for his fate.

XLI. { “Pity not me,” cried the high minded cavalier; “but pity those, who fight against their king, their country, and their oath.”

The emperor and his allies were less successful in their attempts upon France; they were baffled in every quarter; and Francis, though stripped of his italian dominions, might still have enjoyed in safety, the glory of having defended his native kingdom against one half of Europe, and bid defiance to all his enemies: but his ancient ardour seized him, for the conquest of Milan, and he determined to march into Italy.

A. D. The unfortunate battle of Pavia, in which the
1525. king, after performing many acts of valour, was made prisoner, seemed to foretel his inevitable ruin. He wrote to his mother, Louisa, whom he had left regent of the kingdom, the following short, but expressive letter. “All, madam, is lost, our honour excepted.” Louisa, instead of giving herself up to such lamentations as were natural to woman, took every possible measure for putting the kingdom in a posture of defence; she employed all her address to gain the friendship of the king of England, and a ray of comfort from that quarter soon broke in upon the french affairs.

Henry VIII. instead of joining with Charles to dismember France, became jealous of his rising greatness, and entered into a treaty with the queen

regent

regent. In a word, the captivity of Francis I. which to all appearance should have occasioned such great revolutions, produced only a ransom, mutual reproach, the lie given, and idle challenges, which threw a kind of ridicule on these terrible events, and seemed to degrade the two chief personages in christendom.

CHAP.

XLI.

The principal article, in the treaty of Madrid, by which Francis obtained his liberty, was, that Burgundy should be restored to Charles, as the rightful inheritance of his ancestors, and that Francis's two eldest sons should be delivered up as hostages, for the performance of the conditions stipulated.

Mean while the duke of Bourbon, who commanded the imperialists, had made himself master of the milanese, of which the emperor had promised him the investiture; and his troops beginning to mutiny, for want of pay, he led them to Rome, and promised to enrich them with the spoils of that city. He was as good as his word; for though he himself was slain in planting a scaling ladder against the wall, his foldiers, rather enraged, than discouraged by his death, mounted to the assault with the utmost ardor, animated by the greatness of the prize; and entering the city, sword in hand, plundered it for several days. Clement VII. who had succeeded Adrian, neglecting to make his escape, was taken prisoner, and found that the sacredness of his

A. D.

1527:

CHAP. character could not procure him liberty or re-
 XLI. spect.

Henry and Francis, alarmed at the progress of the imperialists, entered into a closer alliance, and agreed to invade Italy with a powerful army, and to take the most vigorous measures for restoring the pope to his liberty. Clement obtained his freedom; and the treaty of Cambray, which was brought about soon after seemed to restore tranquility to Europe. By this treaty Francis agreed to pay two millions of crowns, as the ransom of his two sons, to resign the sovereignty of Flanders and Artois, and forego all his Italian claims; and Charles ceased to demand the restitution of Burgundy.

A. D.
 1529.

C H A P. XLII.

A general view of Europe, continued to the Peace of Crefpy.

CHARLES, fenfible that the religious divi-
 fions in Germany would in the end prove hurt-
 ful to the imperial authority, appointed a diet
 of the empire to be held at Spire, in order to
 take into confideration the ftate of religion. The
 diet, after much difpute, iffued a decree, prohi-
 biting any further innovations in religion, before
 the meeting of a general council. Againft this
 decree, the elector of Saxony, the landgrave of
 Hefle, the duke of Lunenburg, the prince of
 Anhalt, together with the deputies of fourteen
 imperial cities, entered into a folemn proteft.
 On that account they were called proteftants;
 an appellation which has fince become common
 to all the fects, of whatever denomination, that
 have revolted from the roman fee.

CHAP.
XLII.

In confequence of this decree, which was con-
 fidered as a prelude to the moft violent perfecution,
 the proteftant princes affembled at Smalk-
 alde, and concluded a league of mutual defence. However, Charles did not think this a
 proper feafon to attempt any thing againft them.
 Solyman threatened Hungary with the whole
 force

A. D.
1531.

CHAP. force of the turkish empire. Charles felt the ne-
 LXII. cessity of union ; he therefore granted the pro-
 { testants liberty of conscience, until the meeting
 of a general council ; and they agreed on their
 part, to assist him powerfully against the turks.

This treaty was no sooner concluded, than Charles, at the head of an hundred thousand men, marched against Solyman, who retired before him. This was the beginning of his active life, and personal glory. We now find him at once fighting against the turks, preventing the french from passing the Alps, appointing a council, and returning into Spain, in order to carry the war into Africa, landing before Tunis, gaining a victory over the usurper of that kingdom, appointing a king of Tunis, tributary to Spain, and delivering eighteen thousand christians from captivity, whom he brings home in triumph to Europe, and who, succoured by his bounty, return each to his native country, and exalt the name of Charles V. to the skies. All the princes of christendom now seemed little in comparison with him, and all other glory seemed lost in the superior lustre of his fame.

Francis I. on seeing his rival thus disposing of kingdoms, endeavoured once more to get possession of Milan ; and for this purpose, called in the assistance of Solyman and his turks, whom Charles had driven out of christendom. This conduct might be agreeable to good politics ;
 but

but it stood in need of great success to render it glorious.

CHAP
XLII.

In the fatal expedition of Milan, it was necessary to pass through Piedmont; but the duke of Savoy, who was in the emperor's interest, refused Francis a passage; upon which he ravaged that prince's territories; and the genevese taking advantage of this invasion, threw off the yoke, and have ever since remained entirely free.

Charles, at the head of fifty thousand men, marches from Rome, and obliges the french to repass the Alps: he then enters Provence, and lays siege to Marseilles. The french monarch fixed on the most effectual plan for defeating this invasion. He determined to remain entirely upon the defensive, and to deprive the enemy of subsistence, by laying waste the country about them. The execution of this plan was committed to the marechal Montmorenci, its author, a man happily fitted for such a trust, by the inflexible severity of his disposition. After unsuccessfully investing Marseilles and Arles, after attempting, in vain, to draw Montmorenci from his camp, and not daring to attack it, Charles, having lost one half of his troops, by disease or by famine, was under the necessity of conducting the remains of his army back into Italy.

A. D.
1530.

A truce between these rival princes was at length happily concluded, at the intercession of
 pope

CHAP. pope Paul III. and at an interview, which took
 XLII. place a few days after, these two hostile monarchs and vindictive enemies, who had accused each other of every kind of baseness, conversed together with all the cordiality of brothers, and seemed to vie with each other in expressions of respect and friendship. This was the consequence of the spirit of the times.

The emperor, on his return to Spain, heard that the city of Ghent, in Flanders, had revolted. Charles, impatient to reduce and punish the rebellious city, demanded of Francis a passage through his dominions; who sent the dauphin and the duke of Orleans to conduct him as far as Bayonne, and went in person to meet him as far as Chattelleraut.

The design of Francis, in receiving him in his dominions with so much parade and civility, was to obtain from him a promise of the investiture of the dutchy of Milan; and it was in this idle view that he refused the homage offered him by the inhabitants of Ghent, but he neither got Ghent nor Milan.

The citizens of Ghent, alarmed at the approach of the emperor, sent ambassadors to implore his mercy. Charles only condescended to reply, that he would appear before them “as a sovereign, “and a judge.” He accordingly entered the place of his nativity; and instead of that lenity which

which might have been expected, exhibited an awful example of his severity. Twenty-six of the principal citizens were put to death : a greater number banished ; and the city was declared to have forfeited all its privileges.

CHAP.
XLII.
A. D.
1540.

Having thus re-established his authority in the low countries, Charles began gradually to throw aside the veil under which he had concealed his intentions with respect to the milanese ; and at last peremptorily refused to give up a territory of such value. Francis discovered such resentment at this deception, as made it obvious that he would seize on the first opportunity of revenge, and that a new war would soon desolate the European continent.

Charles now, to put the finishing hand to his glory, resolved to conquer the kingdom of Algiers, as he had done Tunis ; but this expedition proved unfortunate. No sooner had the emperor landed in Barbary, than a frightful hurricane arose, scattered his fleet, and dashed great part of it to pieces ; while he and his land forces were exposed to all the fury of the elements, and the attacks of the enemy. At last Andrew Doria, the famous genoise admiral, happily being able to assemble the remains of the fleet, Charles was glad to reembark, after having lost the best part of his army.

CHAP.
XLII.

The loss which the emperor sustained in this calamitous expedition, encouraged the king of France to begin hostilities. He renewed more strictly his alliance with Solyman, and sent two ministers privately to the pope through Venice. These ministers were assassinated in their way, by order of the marquis del Vasto, governor of Milan, under pretence that they were the emperor's subjects. The war was now renewed with more animosity than ever, but without being distinguished by any remarkable event, except the battle of Cerisoiles, in which ten thousand of the emperor's best troops fell. It will be sufficient for us to know, that after France, Spain, Piedmont, and the low countries, had been alternately, or at once the scene of war; after the turkish fleet under Barbarossa had ravaged the coasts of Italy, and the lilies of France, and the crescent of Mahomet

A. D. 1544. had appeared in conjunction before Nice; Francis and Charles, mutually tired of harrassing each other, concluded a treaty of peace at Crespy. By this treaty, Charles promised the duchy of Milan to the duke of Orleans, the king's son, who was to be his son-in-law, but the death of this prince saved the emperor the confusion of once more breaking his word.

The emperor was chiefly induced to this peace with France, by a determination of humbling the protestant princes of Germany, whom he foresaw would

would endeavour to throw off the imperial authority. But before we take a view of the wars, in which that resolution involved him, it will be necessary to take a glance at the domestic history of England; the knowledge of which will throw light on many foreign transactions.

CHAP.
XLII.
}

C H A P. XLIII.

The domestic History of England, during the Reign of Henry VIII. with some Account of the Affairs of Scotland.

CHAP. XLIII. **T**HE most memorable event in the domestic history of Henry's reign is the divorce of queen Catharine. The king's scruples in regard to the lawfulness of his marriage with his brother's widow, increased with the decay of the queen's beauty. Cardinal Wolsey fortified his master's scruples; and the bright eyes of Anna Boleyn, maid of honour to the queen, carried home every argument to the heart of Henry; violently struck him with the horror of incest, and at once determined him to break off all conjugal commerce with Catharine. He therefore applied to Clement VII. to annul his marriage with Catharine of Spain, contrary to all laws divine and human.

Clement, who had lately seen the city of Rome sacked by the army of Charles V. and having but lately made peace with this prince, was still apprehensive of his resentment. He therefore could by no means think of declaring his aunt a concubine, and her children bastards; who had so long been acknowledged legitimate.

Francis I. strongly supported Henry's cause at Rome, as the enemy of Charles V. whose power

was grown formidable. The pope thus pressed between the emperor and the two kings, and being, as he expressed himself in one of his letters, “between the hammer and the anvil,” had recourse to negotiations, delays, and promises, in hopes that Henry’s passion could not last so long as an italian negotiation; but here he was deceived, the king’s passion grew more violent from opposition. And Henry, instead of making any more applications to the court of Rome, appealed to the universities of Europe, with regard to that controverted point.

CHAP.
XLIII.

At length the universities of France, and particularly the Sorbonne, came to a resolution that the marriage of Henry VIII. with Catharine of Spain, was unlawful, and should be annulled. Accordingly Cranmer archbishop of Canterbury, annulled Henry’s marriage with Catharine; and Anna Boleyn, whom the king had privately espoused, was publicly crowned queen, with all the pomp and dignity suited to that ceremony; and to complete Henry’s satisfaction on the conclusion of this troublesome business, the queen was safely delivered of a daughter, who received the name of Elizabeth, and whom we shall afterwards see swaying the english sceptre with equal glory to herself, and happiness to her people.

Pope Clement VII. could not now avoid rendering the affront offered to Charles V. and the prerogatives of the Holy See; and accordingly

CHAP. issued a bull against Henry VIII. This bull lost
 XLIII. him the kingdom of England; for Henry got
 { himself declared supreme head of the church of
 England by his clergy, and the parliament afterwards confirmed his title, and abolished the pope's authority throughout the kingdom.

This very prince who had written so warmly in defence of the pope's authority against Luther, for which he had received the title of defender of the faith, became now an irreconcilable enemy to the see of Rome. But at the same time, those who maintained the doctrines of Luther, or denied the king's supremacy, were equally the objects of his vengeance. Among the latter were Fisher, bishop of Rochester, and the famous lord chancellor More: these refused to acknowledge the king's supremacy, and died upon the scaffold with heroic constancy.

Anna Boleyn now began to experience the decay of the king's affections, and the capriciousness of his temper. His love was transferred to a new mistress; the charms of Jane Seymour, maid of honour to the queen, a young lady of exquisite beauty, had entirely captivated him. The queen's enemies at court, immediately sensible of the alienation of the king's affections, accomplished her ruin by flattering his new passion. They indirectly accused her of criminal correspondence with several gentlemen of the bedchamber, and even with her own brother. Henry believed all,
 because

because he wished to be convinced. The queen was committed to the tower; brought to her trial; condemned without evidence, and executed without remorse. History affords us no reason to call her innocence in question; and the king, by marrying her known rival the day after her execution, made the motives of his conduct sufficiently evident, and left the world in little doubt about the iniquity of her sentence.

CHAP.
XLIII.

Henry now determined to suppress all the monasteries in the kingdom, as so many nurseries of rebellion, as well as idleness, superstition and folly, and to put himself in possession of their ample revenues. In order to effectuate this robbery with some colour of justice, he appointed commissioners to visit all religious houses: and these men, acquainted with the king's design, brought reports, whether true or false, of such frightful disorders, lewdness, ignorance, priestcraft, and unnatural lusts, as filled the nation with horror; against institutions held sacred by their ancestors, and lately objects of the most profound veneration. There were to the number of three hundred and seventy-six monasteries at once suppressed by parliament; and their revenues, goods, chattels, and plate, were granted to the king.

The suppression of these receptacles of idleness, was followed by an event which completed Henry's domestic felicity; the birth of a son,

CHAP. who was baptized under the name of Edward.
 XLIII. but his happiness was not without alloy; the queen died two days after. A son, however, had been so long, and so ardently desired by Henry, and was now become so necessary, in order to prevent disputes with regard to the succession, the two princesses being declared illegitimate, that the king's affliction was drowned in his joy.

Henry, however, soon contracted a new marriage with Anne of Cleves, of whom he became enamoured by a flattering picture, which the famous Hans Holbein had drawn of her. But when he saw her in person, he found her so different from her picture, that in six months after he resolved upon a third divorce. The bounds of justice and shame had long been broken through, and the clergy and parliament made no scruple of granting a sentence of divorce. After which, he married his fifth wife, Catharine Howard, who was one of his own subjects. Any person but Henry would have been wary of continually exposing the real or pretended infamy of his family; but he, on the contrary, being informed that the queen, before her marriage, had had several gallants, ordered her to be beheaded for past faults, which ought not to have been remembered, and which, at the time of their

A D. commission, did not merit so severe a punishment.
 1542.

After

After being thus stained with the blood of two wives, and branded with the infamy of three divorcements, he caused a law to be passed equally singular and ridiculous; which was, that any person being privy to the gallantry of the queen, and not making the same known, should incur the penalties of high treason; and that every woman about to be married to a king of England, not being a virgin, is bound to declare the same under pain of like punishment.

It was said, by way of jest, of this act, that the king should marry a widow; which he accordingly did in the person of Catharine Parr, his sixth wife, who was very near experiencing the fate of Anna Boleyn, and Catharine Howard; not for any affair of gallantry, but for happening to differ sometimes from the king in matters of religion.

James V. king of Scotland, dying about this time, in the flower of his age, left no issue behind him but an infant daughter, the celebrated and unfortunate Mary Stuart. Henry VIII. was no sooner informed of the death of his nephew, than he projected the scheme of uniting Scotland to his own dominions, by marrying prince Edward, his only son, to the heiress of that kingdom. He accordingly entered into a treaty with the parliament of Scotland for that purpose; but as it was never executed, a knowledge of the particulars of it is of little consequence.

CHAP.
XLIII.

Henry's health had long been declining, and his approaching dissolution was plainly foreseen; but as it had been declared treason to foretell the king's death, no one durst inform him of his condition, lest in the transports of his fury, he should order the author of such intelligence to immediate punishment. At last this awful truth was made known to him; he signified his resignation, and expired in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and thirty eighth of his reign.

A. D.
1574.

C H A P. XLIV.

*A general view of Europe, continued to the Peace of
Chateau Cambresis.*

IN consequence of Charles's resolution to humble the protestant princes of Germany, his chief motive, as has been observed, for concluding a disadvantageous peace with Francis ; he sent ambassadors to Constantinople, and concluded a dishonourable truce with Solyman. Yet this emperor, deemed so powerful, was not able, even with the assistance of his brother Ferdinand, king of Hungary and Bohemia, to raise so large an army of Germans as the confederates could bring into the field. Charles was therefore obliged, in order to raise an equal force, to borrow money and troops of pope Paul III.

CHAP
XLIV.

Nothing could be more complete than the victory he obtained over the army of the confederates at Mulberg. The elector of Saxony, and the landgrave of Hesse, were among the number of his prisoners. The protestants were thrown into the greatest consternation ; the conquered were loaded with taxes ; and, in short, altogether seemed to render him despotic in Germany. But the same thing now happened to him, as after the taking of Francis I. he lost all the fruits

CHAP. of his good fortune. Pope Paul, who had so
 XLIV. much befriended him before his victory, withdrew his troops, as soon as he saw him become too powerful. The new elector of Saxony, Maurice, on whom Charles had bestowed the duchy of the conquered elector, soon declared against him, and even put himself at the head of the league.

At length this emperor, who had been so terrible to all Europe, is on the point of being made prisoner, with his brother, by the confederates, and is obliged to fly with the utmost precipitation and disorder to the desiles of Inspruc. At the same time, the french king, Henry II who had succeeded his father, Francis I. seized upon Metz, Toul, and Verdun, which have ever since remained in the house of France.

And now the possessor of Mexico and Peru is obliged to borrow two hundred thousand gold crowns from Cosmo, of Florence, to endeavour to recover Metz ; and having compromised matters with the protestants, that he might be more at liberty to revenge himself on the french king, he laid siege to that city, with an army of fifty thousand men. This is one of the most memorable sieges we meet with in history ; and has immortalized the reputation of the duke of Guise, who defended the town sixty-five days against the emperor's army, and at length obliged him

to abandon his design, after losing one third of his forces.

CHAP.
XLIV.

In order to counterbalance these and other losses, the emperor concluded a marriage between his son Philip and Mary of England, in hopes of adding that kingdom to his other dominions. He also employed his utmost endeavours to persuade his brother, Ferdinand, king of the romans, to cede the empire to Philip; but so disagreeable a proposal only served to set Ferdinand and Philip at variance for ever.

At length wearied with so many efforts, grown old before his time, and deceived in every thing, he resigned his crown to his son Philip, and renounced the society of mankind at the age of fifty-four, at a time of life, in which the age and ambition of other men are in their full vigour, and when many inferior princes begin to appoint their ministers, and enter upon the career of their greatness.

A. D.
1556.

Charles retired to the monastery of St. Justus, in Estramadura, in Spain. He lived two years after his abdication. His actions are his most eloquent panegyric, and his history his best character. As no prince ever governed so extensive an empire, including his american conquests, none seems ever to be endowed with more capacity for dominion.

Philip II. was master of Spain, of the dutchy of Milan, of the two Sicilies, and all the Netherlands,

CHAP. therlands. His ports were filled with ships, and
 XLIV. his father had left him the best disciplined troops
 in Europe, all commanded by persons who had
 been the companions of his victories. His wife,
 Mary queen of England, wholly governed by his
 insinuations, had declared war against France,
 only upon a letter from him. He might there-
 fore reckon England as a kingdom, of which he
 was master. The ample harvests of gold and
 silver which were sent him from the new world,
 made him a more powerful prince than his father,
 Charles V. who had only enjoyed the first fruits
 of them.

Italy trembled for her liberty ; which deter-
 mined pope Paul IV. to side with France. He
 was desirous, like all other popes who had gone
 before him, to settle a balance, which their hands
 were too weak to hold ; and accordingly propo-
 sed to Henry II. to give Naples and Sicily to one
 of the children of France.

It had long been the ambition of the french
 monarchs to subdue the duchy of Milan and the
 kingdom of the two Sicilies. The pope had
 thoughts of raising an army, and desired Hen-
 ry II. to let him have the famous Francis, duke
 of Guise, to command it ; but most of the car-
 dinals were in Philip's pay. Pope Paul was ill
 obeyed ; he had but few troops, which served
 only to expose Rome, to be taken and sacked by
 the duke of Alva, Philip's general. The duke
 of

of Guise arrives in Italy, and draws near to Rome, with a few troops ; but no sooner had he reached that city, when he heard that the french had lost the fatal battle of St. Quintin, in Picardy.

CHAP.
XLIV.

Mary, of England, had furnished her husband, Philip, with ten thousand english forces against the french. Philip came to London to see these troops embark, but not to head them himself. This army, joined with the flower of the spanish troops, commanded by the duke of Savoy, Philibert, Emanuel, one of the greatest generals of his age, gained so complete a victory over the french army at St. Quintin, that hardly any of their infantry was left, the whole being either killed or taken prisoners.

All the schemes of Henry II. upon Italy were now vanished. the duke of Guise was called home. In the mean time the victorious duke of Savoy took St. Quintin, and he might have marched to the gates of Paris ; but Philip contented himself with paying a visit to his victorious camp, and proved that great events depend frequently upon the characters of men. His character was to set little account by courage, and give all to politics. He suffered his enemy to recover breath, in hopes of gaining more advantage from a peace, the terms of which were in his power to dictate, than by those victories, in which he could have no share himself. He allowed

CHAP. lowered the duke of Guise time to return home to
 XLIV. assemble an army, and put the kingdom in a posture of defence.

A. D. The taking of Calais, in the depth of winter,
 1558. and driving the english from the possession of that important fortrefs, which they had kept for above two hundred and thirteen years, was an action which astonished all Europe, raised the reputation of the duke of Guise above that of all the generals of his time. This conquest was more glorious and profitable than difficult. Queen Mary had left but a weak garrison in Calais, and her fleet arrived only to see the standards of France planted on the walls. This loss, which was chiefly owing to her ministry, completed the aversion which the english had entertained to her.

But while the duke of Guise thus revived the drooping spirits of the french, by the taking of Calais, and afterwards of Thionville, Philip's army obtained another considerable victory over marshal de Fermes, near Gravelines, under the command of count Egmont; that very count Egmont, whom Philip afterwards caused to be beheaded, for defending the rights and liberties of his country.

At length both monarchs, grown tired of hostilities, a treaty of peace was concluded between them at Chateau Cambresis. This war, like so many others, ended at last in marriage. Philip espoused

espoused, for his third wife, the princess Isabella, daughter of Henry II. who had been promised to his son, Don Carlos ; and this unhappy match, is said to have occasioned the untimely fate of don Carlos and the princess.

CHAP.
XLIV.

The particulars of this treaty do not come within our limits to relate ; suffice it to say, that all the causes of discord, which had so long embroiled the powerful monarchs of France and Spain, seemed to be wholly removed, or finally terminated by this famous treaty, which re-established peace in Europe ; almost every prince and state in christendom being comprehended as allies either of Henry or Philip.

Among these contracting powers were included the kings of Denmark, Sweden, and Poland. This circumstance naturally leads us to cast an eye on those countries, which we have not had an opportunity of noticing, as they had no connexion with the general affairs of the continent. Meantime, it will be necessary to observe, for the sake of perspicuity, that Henry II. being killed in a tournament, his son, Francis II. a weak prince, and under age, already married to the queen of scots, succeeded to the crown of France.

C H A P. XLV.

Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, from the Union of these Kingdoms under Margaret Waldemar, surnamed the Semiramis of the North, to the Death of Gustavus Vasa.

CHAP. **M**MARGARET, queen of Denmark, surnamed
 XLV. **S**emiramis of the north, had united the three
 kingdoms of Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, under one head; but this union, seemingly so well calculated for the tranquility of the north, proved the source of much discontent and many barbarous wars. The national antipathy between the swedes and danes, and the evident partiality shewn by Margaret and her successors to the natives of the latter kingdom, roused the resentment of the swedes, who were continually revolting; till at length they were finally subdued by Christian II. king of Denmark, who reduced them to the condition of a conquered people. This cruel tyrant, surnamed the Nero of the north, and Troll, archbishop of Upsall, his minister and accomplice, formed the scheme of murdering the principal swedish nobility; and to affectuate this purpose, the king, after swearing upon the gospel, to forget what was past, gave an entertainment in his palace to all the
 members

members of the senate. The tables were all covered ; and they were in the midst of their festivity, when Christian and the archbishop arose from the table and left the room, but presently returned again, followed by a body of armed men and executioners, and ninety-four persons of distinction were publicly executed for defending the liberties of their country. The tyrants concluded their bloody feast, by the massacre of all the common people, without distinction of age or sex.

CHAP.
XLV.

But Sweden afterwards found a deliverer and avenger, in Gustavus Vasa, a prince descended from the ancient kings of that country. He escaped from Denmark, where he had been imprisoned, and concealed himself in the habit of a peasant, among the mountains of Delicarlia. There, deserted by his companions and guide, who carried off his little treasure, he was obliged to work under ground among the minors, to supply the necessities of nature. At length, after surmounting a thousand difficulties, he engaged the savage, but warlike inhabitants of Delicarlia to undertake his cause, to oppose, and to conquer his tyrannical oppressor. Every thing yielded to his valor and good fortune. His popularity every day increased. He was first chosen regent, and afterwards king of Sweden.

A. D.
1523.

Gustavus died in 1650, leaving behind him the glorious character of a patriot and a king.

Mean-

CHAP. XLV. { Meanwhile Christian, become obnoxious by his tyrannies, even to his danish subjects, was degraded from the throne, and his uncle Frederick, duke of Holstein, was elected king of Denmark and Norway.

A. D. 1533. Frederick was succeeded in the danish throne by his son, Christian III. one of the most prudent and prosperous princes of his age. He established the protestant religion at the same time in Denmark and Norway, in imitation of the examples of Gustavus, who had already introduced it into Sweden.

While Denmark and Sweden were rising to distinction, Russia remained buried in that barbarism and obscurity, from which it was called about the beginning of the present century, by the creative genius of Peter the Great, who made his country known and formidable to the rest of Europe.

Poland began to be of some consideration in the north, after the race of Jagellons came to the throne, and Lithuania was united to that kingdom.

Prussia, which has lately made so great a figure in the affairs of Europe, was only erected into a kingdom in 1700. It was originally conquered from the pagans of the north, by the teutonic knights, who held it upwards of three hundred years.

C H A P. XLVI.

England, from the Death of Henry VIII. till the Accession of Elizabeth, together with some Account of the Affairs of Scotland.

HENRY VIII. by his will, left the crown first to prince Edward, his son, by Jane Seymour, then to lady Mary, his daughter, by Catharine of Spain; and next to lady Elizabeth, his daughter, by Anna Boleyn; though both princesses, had been declared illegitimate by parliament.

CHAP.
XLVI.

Edward VI. being only nine years of age at the time of his father's death; the duke of Somerset was appointed protector of the kingdom during the king's minority. His first design was to force the scots to agree to a match between Edward and their young queen, Mary; in order to which, he marched an army into Scotland, and routed them in a bloody battle near Muffelburg.

A. D.
1547.

This victory, however, which seemed to threaten Scotland with final subjection, was of no real utility to England. It served to make the scots throw themselves inconsiderately into the arms of France, and send their young queen into that kingdom, who was there married to the

T

dauphin,

CHAP. dauphin, afterwards king of France, by the name
XLVI. Francis II.

The reign of Edward VI. which lasted only five years, and during which the nation was, or appeared to be of the protestant religion, was a scene of seditions and troubles. Thomas Seymour, high admiral of England, and the king's own uncle, was beheaded for having quarreled with his brother, the duke of Somerfet; who soon afterwards himself suffered the same fate, by the intrigues of the duke of Northumberland. This nobleman persuaded the king, (who was in a bad state of health,) under pretence of settling the protestant religion, to exclude by his last will and testament, his two sisters, Mary and Elizabeth, from the succession to the crown, and to settle it upon Jane Grey, daughter to the duke of Suffolk, whom he had by Mary, daughter of Henry VII. which afterwards proved fatal, both to Jane, and the author of the project. Jane, who was wife to lord Guilford Dudley, son to the duke of Northumberland, was proclaimed queen on the death of Edward VI. but Mary's right prevailed; and the first thing this queen did, after signing her contract of marriage with Philip II. was to condemn her rival to death. It availed her not that she made a voluntary resignation of her fatal dignity, which she held but nine days; she was led to execution with her husband, father, and father-in-law. This was the
third

third queen of England who had mounted the scaffold within less than twenty years. The protestant religion, in which she was educated, was the principal cause of her untimely fate.

CHAP.
XLVI.

Mary was no sooner established on the throne than she caused the roman catholic religion, which was abolished in her brother's time ; as also, the pope's authority to be restored in England. It were endless to enumerate all the cruelties practised during this reign ; near three hundred protestants having been brought to the stake, in the course of three years, on account of religion ; besides, the savage barbarity on the one hand, and the patient constancy on the other, are so similar in all these martyrdoms, that a narration, very little agreeable in itself, would become altogether disgusting by its uniformity. However, Mary was not able to restore the church revenues, for fear of exasperating the greatest families who had them in their possession ; but she was more successful in her attempts to engage the english in a war with France, at the instigation of her husband Philip ; although, in the end, it turned out to her utter confusion. An army of ten thousand men were sent over to Flanders, who, by their bravery, chiefly obtained the victory of St. Quintin ; for which reason Philip gave the city to be plundered by the english.

CHAP.
XLVI.

Henry II. however, notwithstanding the unfortunate battle of St. Quintin, made himself master of Calais, which the english had held upwards of two hundred years. The recovery of this important place was owing, as it has been already observed, to the vigilant activity of the duke of Guise, who undertook, in the depth of winter, and succeeded in an enterprize that surpris'd his own countrymen no less than his enemies.

This event so much affected Mary herself, whose health had been long in a declining state that she fell into a lingering fever, which put an end to her short and inglorious reign.

A. D.
1558.

After the death of her sister, Elizabeth succeeded to the throne of England; and the first act of her administration was, to re-establish the protestant religion. The joy of the people was equally great, on account of this change in religion, and the queen's accession; the persecuting cruelty of Mary had made more protestants than the pious indulgence of Edward: and the auspicious commencement of Elizabeth's reign prognosticated that felicity and glory which uniformly attended it, till its conclusion.

C H A P. XLVII.

*England, Scotland, and France, from the Peace of
Cheteau Cambresis, to the Death of Charles IX.*

THE treaty of Cheteau Cambresis, though it CHAP.
XLVII.
established peace, by settling the claims of the
contending parties; by no means secured lasting
tranquility to Europe. The reformed opinions
had already made considerable progress both in
France and the low countries; and Philip and
Henry were equally resolved to extirpate heresy
throughout their dominions. The horrors of the
inquisition, long familiar to Spain, were not only
increased in that kingdom, but extended to Italy
and the Netherlands; and though the premature
death of Henry II. suspended for a while the rage
of persecution in France; other causes of discord
arose, and religion was made use of by each party
to light the flames of civil war.

A new source of discord also arose between
France and England. The guises, who at that
time made a handle of religion, to establish their
power in France, made use of the same methods
to set their niece, Mary Stuart, queen of Scot-
land, on the english throne. Masters of the
finances and armies of France, they sent money
and troops over to Scotland, under pretence of as-
sisting the catholics of that kingdom against the

CHAP. protestants, Mary Stuart, who was married to
 XLVII. Francis II. king of France, took upon her the
 { title of queen of England, as being descended
 from Henry VII. All the english, scotch, and
 irish catholics, were in her interest. Elizabeth
 was not yet so firmly settled on the throne, but
 that religious cabal might have shaken her au-
 thority. However, she dispersed this first storm,
 sent an army to the relief the scotch protestants,
 and obliged the queen regent of Scotland, Mary's
 mother, to send the french troops home within

A. D. twenty days.

1650.

Francis II. dying, she obliged Mary Stuart to
 quit the title of queen of England. By her in-
 trigues, she prevailed upon the parliament of Edin-
 burgh to establish the reformed religion in Scot-
 land; and by this artful management she brought
 into her interest a country from which she had
 every thing to fear,

Scarcely was she freed from these inquietudes,
 when she received fresh alarms of a more danger-
 ous kind from Philip II. This monarch was in-
 dispensably her friend so long as Mary Stuart, as
 heiress to Elizabeth, had a prospect of uniting in

A. D. her own person the crowns of France, England,
 1561. and Scotland; but Francis II. being now dead,
 and his widow returned helpless into Scotland,
 Philip had only the protestants to fear, and there-
 fore became an implacable enemy to Elizabeth.

Happily

Happily the adherents of the new doctrine were not without a supporter, nor the Spanish greatness without a counterpoise. The course of events had placed Elizabeth in a situation diametrically opposite to that of Philip, who, contrary to the common maxims of policy, saw an advantage in supporting the established government of France; and Elizabeth, by a concurrence of circumstances, no less singular in protecting a faction, ready to subvert it.

CHAP.
XLVII.

Francis II. dying without issue, his brother Charles, who was only ten years of age, succeeded him on the throne. Catharine de Medici, the queen mother, who was appointed guardian to her son, found herself placed between the protestants and the catholics, the condès, and the guises. The constable Montmorenci was at the head of a separate faction. Division reigned in the court, the city, and the provinces. Catharine could only negotiate, instead of reigning. Her maxim of dividing all parties, that she might be sole mistress, increased the troubles and misfortunes of the state. She began by appointing a conference to be held between the catholics and protestants at Poissi. The consequence of this conference was, the issue of an edict, permitting the protestants to have preaching places without the city, and this edict of pacification proved the source of the civil wars.

CHAP.
XLVII.

The duke of guise, as he was going through Vassi, a town on the borders of Champagne, came upon some calvinists, who, in consequence of the privileges granted them by the edict, were singing psalms, after their manner, in a barn. His servants fell upon, and insulted these poor people; killed about sixty of them, and wounded and dispersed the rest. Upon this, there was a general rising of the protestants in almost every part of the kingdom; and the nation became divided between the prince of Condè and the duke of Guise. Philip II. sent six thousand men, with some supply of money, to reinforce the catholic party; and the prince of Condè employed some german troops to complete the destruction of the kingdom.

The first pitched battle between the catholics and the reformed, was fought near Dreux. This battle was remarkable by both generals being made prisoners; Montmorenci, who commanded the king's army in quality of constable; and the prince of Condè, who was at the head of the reformed army. The duke of Guise, who was second in command to the constable, gained the battle; and Condè's lieutenant, Coligni, saved his army.

After this victory, the duke of Guise laid siege to Orleans. This city was the centre of the Protestant party; and he was on the point of taking it,

it, when he was assassinated by Poltrat; a young gentleman, whose frantic zeal instigated him to that criminal action.

CHAP.
XLVII.

A. D.

1653.

It was not sufficient that the spaniards, germans, and swiss, were called in to help the french to destroy each other; the english were likewise invited to join in the general ruin. Elizabeth sent three thousand men to garrison Havre de Grace, then in the possession of the hugonot party; but the constable Montmorenci, who had been exchanged for the prince of Condè, after great difficulty, drove them out again.

Peace continued between England and Scotland; and even a cordial friendship seemed to have taken place between Elizabeth and Mary. They made professions of the most entire affection. But this appearance was of short duration. These two queens were rivals in all respects; they were rivals in nations, in crowns, in religion, in understanding, and in beauty. The queen of scots, encouraged the catholic faction in England, and the queen of England, still more powerfully supported the protestant party in Scotland, Elizabeth gained so much the ascendancy by her intrigues, that for a long time she prevented Mary from concluding second nuptials, where she had an inclination.

However Mary, in spite of the cabals of her rival, and of the scottish parliament, which was wholly made up of protestants, headed by her natural

CHAP.
XLVII.

tural brother, earl of Murray, marries Henry Stewart, lord Darnley, who was her cousin, and a catholic like herself. Elizabeth, upon this, tampers in private with Mary's protestant subjects, and excites them to take up arms. The queen of scots pursues the rebels in person, and obliges them to retreat into England. Thus far, every thing seemed to favour her, and confounded her rival.

Mary had a soft and tender heart : this was the beginning of all her misfortunes. An italian musician, named David Rizzio, had insinuated himself too far in her good graces. He played well upon several instruments, and had a very agreeable voice. He was greatly instrumental in the queen's marriage with Darnley, and not less so in that dislike she afterwards took to him. Darnley, who had only the name of king, and saw himself despised by his wife, grew incensed and jealous ; and one evening that he knew the queen was in her apartment, he took with him a few armed men, and entered the room, where she was at supper with Rizzio, and one of the ladies of her court. They overturned the table, and slew Rizzio before the queen's eyes, who, in vain, attempted to cover his body with her own. Mary was at that time five months gone with child ; the sight of the naked and bloody weapons made so strong an impression on her, that it was communicated to the infant in her womb. This was
James,

James, afterwards king of England and Scotland, CHAP.
XLVII.
 who was born four months after this melancholy
 affair, and who all his lifetime trembled at the
 sight of a drawn sword, in despite of his utmost
 endeavours to overcome this disposition of his or-
 gans. So great is the force of nature, and so
 powerfully does she act by ways impenetrable to
 us.

The queen soon resumed her authority, was re-
 conciled to the earl of Murray, prosecuted the
 murderer's of Rizzio, and entered into a fresh en-
 gagement with the earl of Bothwell. These new
 amours produced the death of the king her hus-
 band. It is said, an attempt was made to poison
 him, but that the strength of his constitution got
 the better of the drugs they had given him : how-
 ever, it is certain, that he was blown up near Edin-
 burgh, in a lone house, from whence the queen
 had previously removed most of her valuable ef-
 fects. The parliament and the whole nation
 openly charged Bothwell with this murder ; and
 in the midst of the general cry for justice, Mary
 contrived to have herself carried off by this as-
 sassin, whose hands were yet stained with her hus-
 band's blood, and was afterwards publicly married
 to him. A. D.
1567.

These complicated villainies effectually roused
 the scots ; Mary was abandoned by her army,
 and obliged to yield herself prisoner to the con-
 federates. Bothwell fled into the Orkneys ; the
 queen

CHAP.
LXVII.

queen was obliged to resign the crown to her son ; but was allowed to appoint a regent during his minority ; she named her brother, earl of Murray ; this nobleman, however, reproached her in the bitterest manner with her past conduct. At length she escaped from her confinement : Murray's harsh and severe temper had procured her a new party. She found means to raise six thousand men, but she was soon defeated, and obliged to take shelter on the english borders. Elizabeth, at first, gave her an honourable reception at Carlisle : but privately intimated to her, that, as she was accused by the public voice of the murder of her husband, it behoved her to vindicate herself ; and that she might depend on her protection, if she found her innocent.

A. D. Elizabeth now made herself arbitress between
1569. Mary and the scottish regency. The regent came himself in person to Hampton Court, and consented to deposit the papers, containing the proofs against his sister, in the hands of commissioners, to be appointed by the queen of England. The unfortunate Mary, on the other hand, who was still detained a prisoner, excepted against the english commissioners, unless the ambassadors of France and Spain were joined with them. Nevertheless, Elizabeth still caused this unaccountable trial to be carried on, and indulged herself in the cruel pleasure of seeing her rival
pine

pine away in confinement, without coming to any determination concerning her fate.

CHAP.
XLVII.

These disasters of the royal house of Scotland were reflected back upon the nation, which was rent by factions that arose from anarchy. The earl of Murray was murdered by one of these factions, which sheltered itself under the authority of Mary's name. Elizabeth sent an army to keep Scotland in awe. She likewise procured the regency of that kingdom for the duke of Lenox, father to the murdered king.

At the same time a conspiracy was formed in England for delivering Mary from her confinement; and pope Pius V. very indiscreetly issued a bull of excommunication against Elizabeth. This step, which was intended to deliver Mary, only hastened her downfall. The two queens entered into mutual negotiations; the one from her throne, the other from a prison. It was Mary's greatest misfortune to have a number of friends in her disgrace. The duke of Norfolk wanted to marry her, in hopes of a revolution, and reckoning on Mary's right of succession to Elizabeth. Several parties were formed in her favour in London, which were weak indeed; but were capable of being strengthened by forces from Spain, and the intrigues of the court of Rome. These machinations, however, cost the duke of Norfolk his head, who was sentenced to die by his peers, for having solicited succours from

CHAP. from the pope and the king of Spain, in Mary's
XLVII. behalf. The duke of Norfolk's death, rivetted
 this unhappy princess's chains. In the joyless
 situation of a prison, we must leave her for a
 while, and take a view of the civil wars on the
 continent; the issue of which nearly concerned
 both the british queens.

Elizabeth was sensible, that as head of the
 protestant party, her safety in a great measure de-
 pended on the commotions in France, and the
 Low Countries; she therefore contributed, both
 secretly and openly, to enable and encourage the
 reformers to support the struggle. A battle was
 fought on the plains of St. Denis; where, though
 the old constable, Moutmorenci, the general of
 the catholics, was slain; the hugonots were de-
 feated by reason of the inferiority of number.
 This defeat was followed by another at Jarnac,
 where the prince of Condè was killed.

But the loss of this great leader did not break
 the spirit of the hugonots. Coligni, whose cou-
 rage was superior to all difficulties, still supported
 the cause; and having placed at the head of the
 party the prince of Navarre, only sixteen years of
 age, and the young prince of Condè, to both of
 whom he acted as father; he encouraged the pro-
 testants rather to perish bravely in the field, than
 by the hands of the executioner. He found
 means to procure a supply of troops from Ger-
 many, though unable to pay them for their ser-
 vice;

vice; and when defeated again at the battle of Moncontour, by the duke of Anjou, at the head of the catholic army, he still repaired the losses of his party.

CHAP.
XLVII.

At length, after numberless desolations, a new peace seemed to promise the kingdom a breathing time; but this peace only prepared the way for the fatal massacre of St. Bartholomew. This dreadful day had been meditated and planned for above two years. Charles IX. and his mother, Catharine de Medici, in order to lull the hugonots into security, offered the princess Margaret in marriage to the young king of Navarre.

A. D.
1572.

Coligni, the prince of Condè, and all the most considerable men of the protestant party, went cheerfully to Paris, in order to assist at the celebration of those nuptials, which, it was hoped, would finally appease the religious animosities. Coligni was wounded by a shot from a window, a few days after the marriage; yet the court still found means to quiet the suspicions of the hugonots, till the eve of St. Bartholomew, when a massacre was commenced, to which there is nothing parallel in the history of mankind, either from the dissimulation that led to it, or the cruelty and barbarity with which it was put in execution. The protestants, as a body, were devoted to destruction; the king of Navarre, and the prince of Condè, only being excepted from the general doom, and that on condition they should change

CHAP. change their religion. Charles, in person, led
 XLVII. the way to this butchery, which was chiefly conducted by the duke of Guise. About five hundred gentlemen, and men of rank, among whom was the admiral Coligni, were murdered in Paris alone; and near ten thousand persons of inferior condition. The same barbarous orders were sent to all the provinces; and it is supposed, that sixty thousand protestants were butchered in different parts of the kingdom.

But this massacre, instead of annihilating the hugonots, only rendered them more formidable. Animated by the most violent despair, they assembled in large bodies, or crowded into the cities and fortresses in the possession of their party. Rochelle, before which, in a manner, was assembled the whole force of France, sustained a siege of eight months, during which the citizens repelled several attacks, and obliged the duke of Anjou, who conducted the attack, to grant them an advantageous peace, after the loss of twenty thousand men.

The miseries of France increased every day. Charles grew jealous of his brothers, and many of the most considerable men, among the catholics, displeased with the measures of the court, favoured the progress of the hugonots; all things relapsed into confusion. In the midst of these disorders died Charles IX. who, instead of repenting of his violent councils, called aloud for

new severities, even in the agony of death. As he left no male issue, he was succeeded in the throne of France by his brother, the duke of Anjou, lately elected king of Poland. But before we carry further the civil wars of that kingdom, or enter upon the history of those of the Low Countries, it will be necessary to turn back to the affairs of the empire, Spain, Italy, and Turkey.

CHAP.
XLVII.


CHAP. XLVIII.

Germany, from the Resignation of Charles V. to the Death of Maximilian II. with some Account of the Affairs of Spain, Italy, and Turkey, during that period.

CHAP. CHARLES V. as it has already been observ-
 XLVIII. ed, was succeeded in the imperial throne by his brother Ferdinand I. This prince endeavoured, in vain, to reconcile the three religions which divided the empire. The old maxim “divide to reign,” by no means suited him: Germany must be united before he could be powerful. His son Maximilian II. who succeeded him, was still less the sovereign than Ferdinand I. he was obliged to begin his reign with a war against the turks. Solyman I. whose valour and ambition had been so long terrible to christendom, sent a fleet and army to reduce the island of Malta, whence he hoped to drive the knights of St. John, whom he had formerly expelled from Rhodes; and who still continued, according to the principles of their order, to annoy the infidels. But the rock of Malta proved fatal to Solyman’s glory. His general, Mustapha, after a siege of almost five months, and the loss of twenty-four thousand men, was obliged to abandon the enterprise.

A D.
1565.

Solyman,

Solyman, in revenge of this disappointment and disgrace, the greatest that his arms had ever suffered, ravaged the coasts of Italy ; and invading Hungary in person, with a powerful army, laid siege to Zigeth. This city was then the Bulwark of Stiria, against the turks. It had a garrison of two thousand three hundred men, under the command of the brave count Zerini, who defended it long with incredible valour, against the force of Solyman ; while Maximilian lay in the neighbourhood, with an army not inferior to that of the besiegers, without daring to attempt its relief. At length, all the works being destroyed, and the castle set on fire by the enemy, Zerini sallied out, at the head of three hundred chosen men, and died gallantly with his sword in his hand.

A. D.
1566.

During the siege of Zigeth, before which the turks lost upwards of thirty thousand men, Solyman expired in the seventy-sixth year of his age. He was succeeded in the ottoman throne by his son Selim II. who began his reign with concluding a truce of twelve years with Maximilian.

In consequence of this truce, Germany long enjoyed repose, while all the neighbouring nations were disquieted by wars, either foreign or domestick. Selim, in the mean time, was not idle : he took from the venetians the isle of Cyprus, in 1571 ; when the governor, Bragadins, was flayed alive by the Turks, in revenge for the

CHAP. dreadful loss they suffered in the siege of that
 XLVIII. place; amounting, it is said, to no less than four
 } score thousand men.

The fate of Cyprus alarmed pope Pius V. and the king of Spain. Philip II. whose italian dominions were in danger, entered into a league with the pope and the venetians against the turks. A formidable armament of two hundred gallies, and several other vessels, were suddenly fitted out. The celebrated Don John of Austria, a natural son of Charles V. was appointed to the chief command.

A. D. The turkish fleet, which consisted of about two
 1571. hundred and fifty gallies, was attacked near the gulph of Lepanto, and entirely defeated, with the loss of one hundred and fifty gallies; yet the victors gained nothing but glory. The pope was so transported with the success of the enterprise, that he exclaimed in a kind of holy extasy, "There was a man sent from God, and his name was John;" alluding to Don John of Austria. Two years after, Don John made himself master of Tunis, a conquest which Spain enjoyed only a single year. The turks retook it, and put the garrison to the sword.

A. D. During all these bloody transactions, the mere
 1576. recital of which makes the human heart shrink from the horrors of war, Germany continued to enjoy tranquility under the mild government of Maximilian. He died while preparing to support
 port

port his election to the kingdom of Poland, and was succeeded in the imperial throne by his son Rodolph II. a prince who inherited the pacific disposition of his father, and preserved Germany, during his whole reign, from those pernicious wars which after his death embroiled all christendom.

CHAP.
XLVIII.

We must now return to new horrors ; to behold christians and fellow citizens exercising on each other as great barbarities as ever were exercised upon the followers of Christ by those of Mahomet.

CHAP. XLIX.

A general View of Europe, from the Death of Charles IX. to the Accession of Henry IV. to the Throne of France; including the Rise of the Republic of Holland. The Catastrophe of Don Sebastian, King of Portugal. The Execution of Mary, Queen of Scots; and the Defeat of the Spanish Armada.

CHAP. XLIX. **A** PARTICULAR detail of the many great and singular events which the period before us affords, would rather perplex the memory than inform the judgment. We shall, therefore, only give a general survey. Consequences are chiefly to be noted.

The duke of Anjou, who succeeded his brother Charles, under the name of Henry III. found the kingdom in the greatest disorder imaginable. The people were divided into theological factions, furious from their zeal, and mutually enraged from the injuries which they had committed or suffered. Each party had devoted itself to leaders, whose commands were of more weight than the will of the sovereign. The catholics were entirely guided by the counsels of the duke of Guise and his family; the king of Navarre and the prince of Condè placed themselves at the head of the hugo-
nots.

nots. Henry III. resolved to act as an umpire between the parties ; and by moderating the difference, reduce both to a dependence upon himself. In the prosecution of this moderating scheme, he entered into a treaty with the protestants, and granted them a peace on the most advantageous conditions.

This treaty gave the highest disgust to the catholics, and afforded the duke of Guise the desired pretence of declaiming against the conduct of the king ; and of laying the foundation of that famous league, projected by his uncle the cardinal of Lorrain. The leaguers pretended that their union was formed for the defence of the catholic religion, the king, and the kingdom ; and were not ashamed to cover, even with the mask of patriotism, the most determined spirit of rebellion. Henry thought to divert the force of the league from the throne, by declaring himself the chief of it. An absurd measure, which encouraged and strengthened a party whence he had every thing to dread.

Elizabeth, who always considered her interests as connected with the prosperity of the french protestants, and the depression of the duke of Guise, had repeatedly supplied the hugonots with considerable sums of money. Philip, on the other hand, had declared himself protector of the league ; had entered into the closest correspondence with the duke of Guise, and employed all his autho-

CHAP. rity in supporting the credit of that factitious
 XLIX. leader. The subjection of the hugonots, he flattered himself, would be followed by the submission of the flemings: these people had imbibed the doctrine of the reformation; and Philip, whose thirst of heretical blood could not be allayed, was desirous that the inquisition should be invested with the same powers in Italy and Flanders, as in Spain. But the milanese and neapolitans refused to admit that tribunal, whose yoke he endeavoured to impose upon them; and the love of liberty being more congenial to the flemings, produced more dreadful convulsions.

The duke of Alva, a fit instrument in the hands of such a despot, was employed by Philip to put this design into execution; he conducted into the low countries a powerful body of spanish and italian veterans.

The appearance of such an army, with the inexorable and vindictive character of their leader, struck the flemings with terror and consternation. Their apprehensions were but too just. The privileges of the provinces were openly and expressly abolished by an edict; arbitrary and sanguinary tribunals were erected; the counts of Egmont and Horn, notwithstanding their past services in war, were brought to the scaffold, and nothing was heard of but seizure, confiscation, imprisonment, torture, and death. The people in the neighbourhood of Brille, rendered desperate by that complication

complication of cruelty, oppression, and persecution under which they and their countrymen laboured, flew to arms, defeated a spanish detachment, and put themselves under the protection of the prince of Orange, who resolved to rescue his country from oppression. He inflamed the inhabitants by every motive which religious zeal, resentment, or love of freedom could inspire. In a short time almost the whole province of Holland, and also that of Zealand, threw off the spanish yoke; and the prince, by uniting the revolted towns in a league, laid the foundation of that illustrious republic, whose arms and policy long made so considerable a figure in the transactions of Europe, and whose commerce, frugality, and persevering industry, is still the wonder of the world.

The love of liberty transformed into heroes men little accustomed to arms, and naturally averse from war. Our confined plan will not permit us to give a circumstantial account of the military operations of each party; suffice it to say, that the spaniards were continually repulsed. The duke of Alva petitioned to be recalled from his government, and boasted at his departure, that in the course of five years he had made eighteen thousand heretics perish by the hands of the public executioner.

Requesens, who succeeded him, began his government, by pulling down the insulting statue
of

CHAP. of his predecessor, erected at Antwerp. He also
 XLIX. published an act of indemnity ; for Philip began
 to dread that violent remedies would still increase the evil ; but it produced no effect ; the people rather chusing to continue the war, than to trust the clemency of a perfidious king. Requesens, by his virtues and great abilities, would have been capable of restoring affairs ; but he died in 1576. Leyden was besieged by his troops, but the dutch opened the dykes and sluices ; and the spaniards were obliged to raise the siege after a great loss.

Don John of Austria, who was appointed successor to Requesens, set out with full powers to grant the rebels all their demands, except liberty of conscience. All the gentle methods at first employed by don John, proved ineffectual ; he then had recourse to arms.

The flemings, knowing the contest must prove in the end unequal, between a mighty monarchy and two small provinces, offered the sovereignty of their country to Elizabeth ; but the dread of incurring the reproach of usurpation, or not being able to keep possession of that principality, made her wisely averse from an attempt which was too hazardous. She therefore contented herself with entering into a defensive league with the rising republic, to whose assistance she sent a body of troops, under the command of her favourite, the earl of Leicester,

But

But the Flemings, while strengthening themselves by foreign alliances, were weakened by dissensions at home. Jealous of the prince of Orange, they chose for their governor, the archduke Matthias, brother of the emperor Randolph II. and the prince of Orange set up the duke of Anjou, formerly duke of Alençon. Thus was torn in pieces, a country, where the quarrels of religion, and the abuses of despotism, gave birth to every evil.

CHAP
XLIX.

Philip II. jealous of his brother, don John, and suspicious of his designs, did not give the succours necessary in so critical a circumstance; notwithstanding which, he defeated the dutch at Gemblours, and took several places; but he died in the midst of his triumphs, leaving the command to his nephew, Alexander Farnese, prince of Parma, the worthy successor of a hero.

While Philip was losing the United Provinces, fortune threw in his way a new sovereignty. Don Sebastian, king of Portugal, smit with the passion for military glory, determined to signalize himself against the moors in Africa. In consequence of this direction of mind, he espoused the cause of Muly Hamet, whom Muly Moloch, his uncle, had dispossessed of the kingdom of Fez and Morocco; and contrary to the advice of his wisest counsellors, embarked for Africa, with an army of twenty thousand men. The army of the enemy was infinitely superior; but that circumstance

A. D.
1579.

CHAP. stance only roused the courage of Don Sebastian ;
 XLIX. he braved the danger, fought, and was slain,
 and almost all the christians perished, or were
 taken prisoners. The two moorish kings lost
 their lives, as well as the king of Portugal.

Sebastian leaving no issue, was succeeded by
 his uncle, cardinal Henry ; who also dying with-
 out children, a number of competitors arose for
 the crown. Among these was the king of Spain,
 the duke of Braganza, don Antonio, prior of
 Crato, the duke of Savoy, the duke of Parma,
 Catherine de Medici, and even the pope, who
 attempted to renew the obsolete claim of the holy
 see to the sovereignty of Portugal. Philip's
 claim was not the best, but he had most power to
 support it. The old duke of Alva, who had been
 for some time in disgrace, like a mastiff unchain-
 ed for fighting, was recalled to court, put at the
 head of an army, and gained two victories over
 don Antonio, who, of all the other competitors,
 alone pretended to assert his title by arms. Phi-
 lip was crowned in Lisbon, and a price was set on
 the head of Antonio.

A. D.
 1582.

A price was also set on the head of the prince
 of Orange, when it was known in Spain, that he
 formed the famous Union of Utrecht, between
 the States of Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Frief-
 land, Groningen, Overysfel, and Guelderland ;
 and that these states had withdrawn their alle-
 giance from Philip.

The

The archduke Matthias having returned home, the duke of Anjou attempted to make himself absolute, to seize upon the towns, and aggrandize his authority by force; by which proceedings he only wrought his own ruin, and was obliged to return into France, where he died in 1584. Elizabeth had flattered him with hopes of marriage, and even engaged herself by promises; but she deceived him, as she had done many other princes, to whom she had given hopes of her hand.

CHAP.
XLIX.

The prince of Orange, after having escaped two conspiracies, fell a victim to a fanatic, named Gerard, who fancied himself commanded by heaven to commit that murder. The states elected his son, Maurice, their stadtholder, and captain general by sea and land. This prince was, at this time, only eighteen years old; but such marks of genius distinguished his character, as approved him worthy of the dignity to which he was raised; and he was opposed to the duke of Parma, the greatest general of that, or perhaps any other age.

A. D.
1584.

This fanaticism, which proved fatal to the prince of Orange, was likely to produce the same effect on Elizabeth. William Parry, an english gentleman, and a convert to the catholic religion, thought he could not perform a more acceptable service to heaven than to take away the life of his sovereign: he came over to England to execute his

his

CHAP. his bloody purpose ; but happily his design was
 XLIX. discovered, and he suffered the punishment his

A. D. crime deserved.

1584. Two years after was formed a conspiracy of the same kind, but more formidable. Anthony Babington, a young gentleman of fortune, instigated by John Ballard, a popish priest of Rheims, engaged in a conspiracy against the life of Elizabeth, as a necessary prelude to the deliverance of the queen of scots, and the re-establishment of the

A. D. catholic religion in England. But Walsingham,
 1586. secretary of state, discovered the whole project, caused the conspirators to be seized, fourteen of whom were executed for their treasonous design.

The scene that followed was new and extraordinary. On the trial of the conspirators it appeared, that the queen of scots, who had held a correspondence with Babington, had encouraged him in his treasonable enterprise ; and it was resolved by Elizabeth, and her ministers, to bring Mary also to a public trial, as being accessory to the conspiracy. Her papers were seized, her principal domestics arrested, and her two secretaries sent prisoners to London. After the necessary information had been obtained, forty commissioners appointed under the great seal, together with five of the judges, were sent to Fotheringay castle, where Mary was now confined, to hear and decide this great cause.

Mary

Mary at first refused to acknowledge the jurisdiction of her judges; but at last imprudently suffered herself to be prevailed on to appear before the commissioners; who after hearing her defence, adjourned to London, where they pronounced sentence of death on that unfortunate princess. The sentence, after many hesitations and delays, was carried into execution.

CHAP.
XLIX.

A. D.
1587.

Such was the fate of Mary Stuart, queen of Scotland, and dowager of France, one of the most amiable and accomplished of her sex; who in the forty-fifth year of her age, and the nineteenth year of her captivity, fell a victim to the jealousy and the fears of an offended rival. But though Mary's trial and execution were arbitrary, history will not permit us to suppose that her actions were at no time criminal. With all the excellencies both of body and mind which can adorn the female character, she had many of the weaknesses of a woman; and our sympathy with her long and accumulated sufferings, seen through the medium of her beauties, only perhaps could prevent us from viewing her, notwithstanding her elegant qualities, with some degree of that abhorrence which is excited by the pollution of the marriage bed, and the guilt of murder.

Elizabeth, when informed of Mary's execution, affected the utmost surprise and concern. Sighs, tears, and lamentations were all employed to display the greatness of her sorrow. She even undertook

CHAP. dertook to make the world believe that the queen
 XLIX. of scots, her dear sifter and kinswoman, had been
 put to death without her knowledge, and contrary to her inclination ; and, in order to complete this farce, she commanded Davison, her secretary, to be thrown into prison, under pretence that he had exceeded his commission, in dispatching the fatal warrant, which, although she had signed, she never meant to carry into execution.

Elizabeth hearing that Philip was secretly preparing that prodigious armament which had for its object no less than the entire conquest of England, sent Sir Francis Drake with a fleet to intercept his supplies, to pillage his coasts, and destroy his shipping ; and that gallant commander, who was the first englishman that circumnavigated the globe, was so successful as to burn in the harbour of Cadiz, an hundred vessels laden with ammunition and naval stores.

A. D. At length the invincible armada, as it was
 1588. called, set sail from the port of Lisbon, with one hundred and fifty large ships, manned with twenty thousand soldiers. The duke of Parma was ready with transports, and an army of thirty thousand men, which he had raised in Flanders, to join Philip the instant of his landing in England. It seemed impossible for the english ships, which were no more than small barks, in comparison with those of the spaniards, to stand against the force of these floating citadels. Nevertheless this
 well

well concerted scheme failed in almost every part. The english soon appeared with a fleet of one hundred sail, commanded by lord Howard, of Effingham; and notwithstanding their inferiority of numbers and strength, stopped the progress of this formidable fleet. They took several of the Spanish ships, and dispersed the rest by means of fire ships; a storm seconded the efforts of the english; and not one half of the fleet returned to Spain. Philip, whose command of temper was equal to his ambition, received with an air of tranquillity the news of so humbling a disaster. I “sent my fleet,” said he, “to combat the english, not the elements. God be praised that the calamity is not greater.”

While the naval power of Spain was receiving this signal blow, great revolutions happened in France. The hugonots, notwithstanding the valour of the king of Navarre, who had gained at Coutras a complete victory over the royal army, were reduced to the greatest extremity by the power of the league; and the exorbitant ambition of the duke of Guise, joined to the idolatrous admiration of the catholics, who considered him as a saviour, and the king, as unworthy of the throne, only could have preserved the reformers from ruin.

Henry, having no resource in the laws, thought he could preserve himself by an act of violence, and caused the duke, and cardinal of Guise, to be

CHAP. XLIX. { affassinated. These cruel executions, which their necessity alone can excuse, had an effect very different from what Henry expected. The partizans of the league were inflamed with the utmost rage against him, and every where flew to arms. The doctors of the Sorbonne had the arrogance to declare, “ that the people were released from the “ oath of allegiance to Henry of Valois ;” and the duke of Mayenne, brother to the duke of Guise, was chosen head of the league.

In this extremity the king, almost abandoned by his catholic subjects, entered into a confederacy with the hugonots and the king of Navarre. The two kings, with their united forces, advanced to the gates of Paris, and were ready to crush the league, when Henry III. was stabbed by James Clement, a dominican priest. This assassination left the succession open to the king of Navarre ; who, as next heir to the crown, assumed the government under the title of Henry IV. But the reign of this great prince, and the various difficulties which he was obliged to encounter before he could settle his kingdom, must be referred to a future chapter.

C H A P. L.

*A general View of Europe, from the Accession of
Henry IV. to the Peace of Vervins.*

THE reign of Henry IV. justly stiled the CHAP.
L.
} Great, is one of the most memorable æras in the history of France. The circumstances of the times, the character of the prince, and of the man, all conspire to render it interesting; and his connections with other christian powers, either as allies or enemies, make it an object of general importance. The eyes of all Europe were fixed upon him as the hero of its military theatre, and the centre of its political system. Philip and Elizabeth were now but secondary actors.

The prejudices entertained against Henry's religion, made one half of the royal army forsake him on the assassination of his predecessor. He abandoned the siege of Paris, and retired into Normandy. Thither he was followed by the duke of Mayenne, and the forces of the league, who had proclaimed the cardinal of Bourbon king, under the name of Charles X.

In this extremity Henry had recourse to the queen of England, and found her well disposed to assist him: she sent him twenty-two thousand pounds, and a reinforcement of four thousand

CHAP. men, under the command of lord Willoughby,
 { L. an officer of abilities.

A. D. The king's forces were still much inferior to
 1590. those of the league; but what was wanting in numbers was made up in valour. He attacked the duke of Mayenne at Ivry, and gained a complete victory over him. Henry's behaviour on this occasion was truly heroic: "My lads," said he to his soldiers, "if you should lose sight of your colours, rally towards this," pointing to the white feather in his hat; "you will always find it the road to honour and glory. God is with us," added he, drawing his sword, and rushing into the thickest of the enemy; but when he perceived their ranks broken, and great havock committed in the pursuit, his natural humanity led him to cry, "Spare my french subjects;" forgetting that they were his enemies.

Soon after this victory died the cardinal of Bourbon; and the king invested Paris, which he might have reduced by famine, had not his paternal tenderness for his people, perhaps ill-timed, made him forget the duty of a soldier, and relax the rigour of war. He left a free passage to the old men, women, and children: he permitted the peasants, and even his own men, to carry provisions secretly to the besieged: "I would rather never possess Paris," said he, "than acquire it by the destruction of its citizens." He feared no reproach so much as his own heart.

Meantime

Meantime the duke of Parma, by order of the king of Spain, left the low countries, and hastened to the relief of Paris. On his approach Henry raised the siege, and offered him battle ; but that consummate general, having performed the important service for which he was detached, declined the combat, and marched back to his own government. After the retreat of the Spaniards, Henry made several fresh attempts upon Paris ; but the vigilance of the faction of sixteen, by which it was governed, defeated all his designs : however, some succours from England and Germany put him in a condition to besiege Rouen ; and when he hoped to triumph over it, had the mortification of seeing his prey again snatched from him by the duke of Parma. The gallant monarch, burning with revenge, again boldly offered him battle ; again pursued him ; and the duke, by a wonderful piece of generalship, and in spite of the greatest obstacles, a second time made good his retreat to the Netherlands, where he soon after died.

Meanwhile all things were hastening to a crisis between the parties ; the king of Spain endeavoured, in vain, to get his daughter Eugenia, acknowledged queen of France ; it was proposed that she should espouse a prince of France, and the young duke of Guise was fixed on for her husband. But the duke of Mayenne, unwilling to become dependent on his nephew, published a decree, declaring such a treaty was contrary to the

CHAP. ^{L.} falic law, which being a fundamental principle of the government, could on no account whatsoever be set aside.

In the meantime the catholics of the king's party began to complain of his perseverance in calvinism, and the moderate men of that persuasion represented to him the necessity of a change. At last he conferred one or two days with his friends, and performed the ceremony of abjuration at St. Denis, in presence of a multitude of people.

A D.
1593.

Henry, soon after his conversion, was received into the capital, where he was on the point of perishing by the hand of a desperate assassin, named John Chatel. When he was interrogated, he alleged he had frequently heard his ghostly preceptors, the jesuits, say, the king-killing was lawful. Some libels against the king were found among the papers of father Guiscard, and he suffered the punishment appointed for treason. The jesuits were banished the kingdom by a decree of the parliament of Paris.

The leaguers having now no pretext for their religion, the league was necessarily dissolved. But the duke of Mayenne, being supported by Philip II. still held out that he might obtain advantageous terms. Henry led an army into Burgundy, expelled the spaniards from that province, obliged the duke of Mayenne to sue for an accomodation, and received absolution from the pope.

We shall take a rapid sketch of the events of the war with Spain, that we may at our leisure contemplate the public happiness. Calais was taken for the spaniards by a french officer in their service, and that conquest was followed by the surprisal of Amiens; but Henry heroically recovered that place, obliged the duke of Mercœur, who still held part of Bretagne, to submit, and returned in triumph to Paris.

CHAP.
L.

But the hugonots at that time gave him almost as much uneasiness as the enemy. They frequently expressed apprehensions on account of their religion: Henry soon made them easy on that point. He passed the famous edict of Nantz, which granted them every thing they could reasonably desire. It not only secured to them the free exercise of their religion, but a share in the administration of justice, and the privilege of being admitted to all employments of trust, profit, and honour.

Meantime the king of Spain, weighed down with age and infirmities, grew weary of an unsuccessful war. Elizabeth, though displeased with Henry's conversion, continued her assistance to him, and to the united provinces; and the english navy became every day more formidable. The admiral Effingham, accompanied by the earl of Essex, attacked the spaniards even in the road of Cadiz; the city was pillaged, and the

CHAP. loss of the enemy was estimated at twenty mil-
 L. lions of ducats.

At last Philip offered peace to the confederates on pretty equitable terms; but as he refused to acknowledge the independency of the united provinces, and Elizabeth to abandon their cause, Henry was compelled by the exigency of the state to treat separately. Peace was concluded at Vervins, which put Henry in possession of all the conquests made by the spaniards in Picardy.

But before we take a view of the flourishing state of France, under the equitable government of this great and good prince, and the wise administration of Sulli, or of England, during the latter part of the reign of queen Elizabeth, we must take a glance at the contest between Spain and the united provinces.

C H A P. LI.

Spain, and the Low Countries, from the Peace of Vervins to the Truce in 1609, when the Freedom of the United Provinces was acknowledged.

SOON after the peace concluded between France and Spain, at Vervins, Philip breathed his last at Madrid, leaving behind him the character of a dark, jealous, haughty, vindictive, and inexorable tyrant. With great talents for government, he failed to obtain the reputation of a great prince; his head fitted him for the throne of Spain, and his indefatigable application, for the sovereignty of both Indies; but his heart and his habit of thinking, only for the office of grand inquisitor. Hence, he was long the terror, but never the admiration of Europe.

CHAP.
LI.
A. D.
1598.

The war with Holland still continued. Elizabeth protected those brave republicans, who, for so many years resisted the Spanish power, and had the glory of procuring an acknowledgment of their independence, which, notwithstanding their invincible courage, they had not yet been able to obtain. Let us collect the facts, the knowledge of which here becomes necessary.

In 1598, Philip II. ceded the Low Countries to his daughter Isabella, who was married to the archduke

CHAP. duke Albert, on condition, that in default of heirs,
 LI. these provinces should revert to Spain. Though
 the dutch had been less fond of liberty, yet the
 dread of again falling under the spanish yoke was
 sufficient to make them redouble their efforts.
 Their leader Maurice, prince of Orange, main-
 tained the glory of his family. Sieges, battles,
 and conquests were multiplied as before.

No siege can be found in modern history com-
 parable to that of Ostend, for its length, or the
 blood that was spilt. This place, which held
 out three years and three months, cost the spa-
 niards fourscore thousand men. Ambrose Spi-
 nola, a genoesse, who gloriously concluded this
 siege, is a great example of the strength of ge-
 nius. While his brother Frederick was distin-
 guishing himself in the armies, Ambrose was en-
 gaged in trade, but all at once came to join him,
 when the former being killed, he supplied his
 place, shewing himself an able captain, though
 he had no master except books. He was created
 commander in chief in Flanders, by Philip III.
 Such is the force of genius ! It can, without as-
 sistance, rapidly make its way to glory, to which
 more assiduity leads only by slow degrees.

In the heat of this obstinate war, the dutch
 never let slip an opportunity of pushing their
 trade and manufactures. Every nerve was strained
 in labour, and every talent in ingenuity. Their
 fleets had already taken the Moluccas ; and the
 East

East India Company, the grand bulwark of the republic, was established.

CHAP.

LI.

At length, through the mediation of France and England, the dutch liberty was established on a firm footing, by a truce of twelve years, concluded at the Hague; by which Philip III. acknowledged the united provinces as free and independent states, and obliged himself to allow them a free trade in the Indies and America.

Can it be believed that Spain, after so many losses, should give itself a deep and incurable wound, from the same persecuting spirit by which it had lost a great part of its subjects? by an insensate edict, all the morescoes, or descendants of the moors, were ordered to leave the monarchy in thirty days. Such were the fruits produced by the zeal of the inquisitors. Spain lost near a million of industrious inhabitants; and as that kingdom was already depopulated by long and bloody foreign wars, by repeated emigrations to the new world, and enervated by luxury, it now sunk into a state of langour from which it has never recovered.

C H A P. LII.

*The Domestic History of England, from the Defeat
of the Spanish Armada, to the Death of Elizabeth;
with some Particulars of Scotland and Ireland.*

CHAP. **T**HE leading characteristics of Elizabeth's ad-
 { LII. ministrations were œconomy and vigour. By a
 strict attention to the first, she was enabled to
 maintain a magnificent court, and to support the
 persecuted protestants in France and the Low
 Countries, without oppressing her people, or in-
 volving the crown in debt; and by a spirited
 exertion of the second, she humbled Spain, and
 gave stability to her throne, in spite of all the
 machinations of her enemies.

Elizabeth's attention was much occupied by
 the affairs of Ireland, where the english autho-
 rity had hitherto been little more than nominal.
 The irish princes and nobles, divided among
 themselves, readily paid the exterior marks of
 obedience to a power which they were unable to
 resist; and as no durable force was ever kept on
 foot to retain them in subjection, they relapsed
 still into their former state of independence.
 Other reasons conspired to prevent a cordial
 union. The small army which was maintained
 in

in Ireland never being regularly paid, the officers were obliged to give the foldiers the privilege of free quarters upon the natives. Rapine and insolence inflamed the hatred which prevailed between the conquerors and the conquered; and that, together with the old opposition of manners, laws, and interests, was now heightened by religious animosities, the irish being still catholics.

CHAP.
LII.

The romantic and impolitic project of the english princes to subdue France, occasioned this inattention to the affairs of Ireland; a country, which has since proved to be the brightest jewel in the english crown. Elizabeth early saw its importance, and employed several expedients for reducing it to a state of greater order and submission.

Hugh O'Nial, earl of Tyrone, preferring the pride of independence to every other consideration, took up arms, and defeated the english under Sir Henry Bagnal, who was left dead on the field, together with fifteen hundred men.

This victory, which mightily animated the irish, and raised the reputation of Tyrone, made Elizabeth sensible of the necessity of pushing the war by more vigorous measures. She therefore sent over to Ireland, her reigning favourite, the earl of Essex, at the head of an army of seventeen thousand men. But Essex, unacquainted
with

CHAP. with the country, miscarried in the enterprize,
LII. disappointed the expectations of the queen and
 the nation ; and, lastly, embraced the rash resolution of returning home, expressly contrary to his sovereign's orders. Upon this, Elizabeth ordered him to be confined, and deprived of all his employments ; yet it is not to be questioned, but she would have pardoned him, had he prudently waited her pleasure ; instead of which, his hasty impetuous temper, irritated by despair, plunged him into a conspiracy and rebellion.

He was seized, and, after a short trial, beheaded in 1601. Yet, notwithstanding his offences, he had still continued to be the object of Elizabeth's affection. No sooner was the fatal blow struck than she repented ; she became sensible she had been deceived by his enemies, and lamented her rashness, in sacrificing a man on whose life her happiness depended. The remainder of her life she languished in deep melancholy, either caused by the death of Essex, or the vexation of seeing the attention and homage of the courtiers directed to James VI. king of Scotland, the presumptive heir to her crown.

A. D. This illustrious princess, whose private life
 1603. furnishes matter of censure, but who always governed like a great monarch, died in the seventieth year of her age,

The character of Elizabeth has been too often drawn to admit of any new feature ; and is best deli-

delineated in her conduct. She would have enjoyed an unblemished fame, had she not sullied a
reign, in other respects so glorious, by the murder of the queen of Scotland.

CHAP.

LII.

C H A P. LIII.

France, from the Peace of Vervins, to the Death of Henry IV.

CHAP. **H**OWEVER capable Henry was of seeing what
 LIII. was right, and governing properly by himself, yet he stood in need of an able and upright minister, on whom he might devolve the more ordinary cares of administration. Such an assistant he found in his favourite, the marquis of Rosini; whom he created duke of Sulli, in order to give more weight to his authority.

Sulli's first care was the finances; and it is inconceivable in how little time he drew the most exact order out of that chaos in which they had been involved by his predecessors. He reduced all the expences of government; and took care, that the king should always have such a reserve, as not to be obliged, on any emergency, either to lay new impositions on his people, or to make use of credit. By these prudent measures, he paid, in the space of five years, all the debts of the crown, augmented the revenue four millions of livres, had four millions in the treasury, and had considerably diminished the taxes.

Sensible that a fertile country, well cultivated, is the principal source of the happiness of a people

ple, and the most solid foundation of national prosperity, he gave great encouragement to agriculture. He also, by the desire of Henry, established the culture and manufacture of silk; and the success was answerable to the king's expectations.

CHAP.
LIII.

A heart, too susceptible of tender impressions, was continually involving Henry in new amours, destructive at once of his domestic peace and of public tranquillity. Scarce had death relieved him from the importunities of Gabriel d'Estrees, than he gave a promise of marriage to Henrietta d'Estragues, though not yet divorced from Margaret of Valois, his first queen. He shewed the obligation to Sulli, when ready to be delivered; and that faithful servant, transported with zeal for his master's honour, tore it in pieces. "I believe you are turned fool," said Henry. "I know it," replied Sulli; "and with I was the only fool in France."

Sulli now thought himself out of favour for ever; and remained in that opinion, when the king surprised him, by adding to his former employments that of master of the ordnance. The sentence of divorce, which Henry had been long soliciting at Rome, was procured; and he married, in order to please his subjects, Mary of Medicis, niece to the great duke of Tuscany. But this step did not put an end to his amours, which continued to embroil him perpetually, either

CHAP. with the queen, or his mistress, created marchio-
 LIII. nefs of Verneuil.

But Henry's most alarming troubles proceeded from the intrigues of the court of Spain. By these, the duke of Savoy was encouraged to maintain war against him; and after that prince was humbled, the duke of Biron was drawn into a conspiracy, which cost him his head.

These continued attempts to disturb the peace of the kingdom, made Henry resolve to carry into execution a design, which he had long formed, of humbling the house of Austria, and circumscribing its power in Italy and Germany.

He had already taken all his measures, when the emperor, Rodolphus II. furnished him with a reason for commencing the war, by sequestrating the duchies of Juliers and Cleves, after the death of the late duke. The protestants of Germany, the pope, the venetians, the duke of Savoy, and the Swifs, entered into Henry's views, and took part in the alliance. Never was any enterprise better concerted. Sulli had laid up forty millions of livres in the treasury, which were destined for this war; and the king was ready to march into Germany at the head of forty thousand excellent troops, when he was assassinated by Ravillac, a desperate fanatic, who had long formed a design to murder him; taking advantage of the opportunity of his carriage being entangled in the street,

A. D.
 1610.

street, he stabbed him in the midst of seven courtiers who were in the coach.

CHAP.
LIII.

Thus perished Henry IV. one of the greatest and best princes that ever sat upon the throne of France; and with him perished all his great designs. A more melancholy reflection cannot enter the human mind, than is suggested by this untimely event; that a wretch unworthy of existence, and incapable of one meritorious action, should be able to overturn the most illustrious enterprises, and to terminate a life necessary to the welfare of millions.

C H A P. LIV.

A general View of the Continent of Europe, from the Assassination of Henry IV. to the Treaty of Prague.

CHAP. LIV. **T**HE greater part of the european continent, during the period that followed the death of Henry IV. was a scene of anarchy, rebellion, and bloodshed. Germany continued, for many years, involved in those disputes which he was preparing to settle. Religious controversies, which almost always mingle themselves with civil affairs, distracted the United Provinces, and robbed them of that valuable tranquility which they had so gallantly earned by their valour and perseverance; and France, under the minority of Lewis XIII. and the weak regency of his mother, Mary of Medicis, returned to that state of disorder and wretchedness out of which it had been raised by the mild and equitable, but vigorous, government of Henry the Great.

The emperor Rodolphus II. died, and was succeeded by his brother Matthias; who finding himself advancing in years, and declining in health, he procured, in order to strengthen his authority, his cousin, Ferdinand de Gratz, duke of Stiria, whom he intended as his successor in the empire, to be elected king of Bohemia, and
acknow-

acknowledged in Hungary, neither himself nor his brothers having any children; and he engaged the spanish branch of the house of Austria, to renounce all pretentions which it could possibly have to those crowns.

CHAP.
LIV.

The family compact alarmed the protestant or evangelic union, as it was called, and occasioned the hungarians and bohemians to revolt. The confederates were headed by the count de la Tour, a man of abilities, and supported by an army of german protestants, under the famous count Mansfeldt. Thus was kindled a furious civil war, which desolated Germany during thirty years, interested all the powers of Europe, and was not finally extinguished till the peace of Westphalia.

A. D.
1618.

In the midst of these disorders died the emperor Matthias, without being able to foresee the event of the struggle, or who should be his successor. The imperial dignity, however, went according to his destination. Ferdinand de Gratz was raised to the vacant throne, notwithstanding the opposition of the elector Palatine, and the states of Bohemia.

The election of Ferdinand II. instead of intimidating, confirmed the resolution of the bohemians: they formally deposed him from the sovereignty, and chose Frederick V. elector Palatine, for their king. Frederick, seduced by his flatterers, accepted the crown, notwithstanding

CHAP. the remonstrances of James I. of England, his
 LIV. father-in-law, who used all his interest in persuading him to reject it, and protested that he would give him no assistance in such a rash undertaking.

Frederick, who was supported by all the protestant princes, except the elector of Saxony, lost the battle of Prague, in 1620, and was obliged to save himself by flight. The Palatine, and his adherents, were put under the ban of the empire; and count Tilli, the imperial general, bore down all opposition.

While the house of Austria was thus extending its authority in Germany, a project, no less ambitious than bloody, was concerted, for rendering the spanish branch of that family absolute in Italy. The duke of Ossuna, viceroy of Naples, the marquis of Villa Franca, governor of the Milanese, and the marquis of Bedmar, the spanish ambassador at Venice, formed a scheme for subjecting the venetians, and with them the rest of Italy; for this purpose they had formed a horrid conspiracy which would infallibly have put them in possession of Venice. That city was
 A. D. 1618. to have been set on fire, in different parts, by a band of russians already lodged within its walls, while a body of troops, sent from the Milanese, should attack on one side, and some armed vessels from Naples, on the other. But this famous plot was discovered by the vigilance of the senate, when

when it was almost ripe for execution. The greater part of the conspirators were privately drowned; and Bedmar, who had violated the law of nations, being secretly conducted out of the city, was glad to make his escape.

CHAP.
LIV.

Meanwhile Philip III. died, and was succeeded by his son, Philip IV. a prince of a much more enterprising disposition than his father; and the abilities of Olivarez, the new minister, was infinitely superior to those of the duke of Lerma, who had governed during the greater part of the former reign. The ambition of Olivarez was yet more extensive than his capacity. He hoped to raise the house of Austria to that absolute dominion, in Europe, for which it had been so long struggling. Nor was this project so chimerical as it may at first sight appear. The emperor had already broken the protestant league; France was distracted by civil wars; and England was amused by a marriage treaty between the prince of Wales and the infanta, which more than every other motive, actually prevented James from taking any material step in favour of the Palatine, till he was stripped of his dominions. But France, notwithstanding her intestine commotions, was not lost to all sense of danger from abroad; and the match with the infanta being broke off by a quarrel between Buckingham, James's minister, and Olivarez, an alliance was entered into between France and England, in conjunction with

CHAP. the United Provinces, for restraining the ambi-
LIV. tion of the house of Austria.

After the truce in 1609, the united provinces became a prey to religious divisions. The gomarists and arminians divided the republic: the former were headed by prince Maurice, and the latter by the pensionary Barneveldt, a firm patriot. But prince Maurice and the gomarists at last prevailed. The arminian preachers were banished, and Barneveldt was brought to the block.

In France, during this period, both civil and religious disputes were carried much higher than in Holland. Lewis XIII. being only nine years of age when his father, Henry IV. was murdered, Mary of Medicis, the queen's mother, was chosen regent. This princess was entirely guided by her italian favourites, Concini, and his wife Galigai.

The nobility, dissatisfied with the measures of the court, and with the favour shewn to foreigners, revolted. The prince of Condè headed the malcontents: troubles, civil wars, disorders, and misfortunes rapidly trod on the heels of each other.

Meantime Concini received a blow from a quarter whence he little expected it. Albert Luines, who had at first recommended himself to the king's favour by rearing and training birds for the king's amusement, found means to make

make him jealous of his authority. Orders were therefore given to arrest Concini; and Vitri, captain of the guards, to whom the service was entrusted, executed it entirely to the wishes of Luines: that is, Concini was shot, under pretence of resistance. Galigai, his widow, being accused of sorcery and magic, was condemned by the parliament of Paris to suffer death. When asked what spell she made use of to fascinate the queen mother? she replied, "*The ascendancy which a superior genius has over a weak mind.*" The queen mother was exiled to Blois, where she entered into a plot with the duke d'Espernon, and made her escape with a design to begin a civil war; but matters were accommodated with her and the duke, by making them some advantageous concessions. A new quarrel broke out, and was followed by a new accommodation.

CHAP.
LIV.

A. D.
1617.

These negotiations, on the part of the queen mother, had been chiefly conducted by Richelieu, bishop of Lucon. He had been disgraced with his mistress, and with her returned into favour, as well as consequence. At her solicitations he obtained a cardinal's hat, a seat in the council, and soon after a share in the administration; but hypocrisy was necessary to conceal for a time, from envy and jealousy, those transcendent abilities which were one day to astonish Europe.

In

CHAP. In the meantime a new civil war was kindled,
 LIV. more violent than those of the former. Lewis
 XIII. had offended the protestants, by an attempt to re-establish the catholic religion in the province of Bern, where there were no catholics. The hugonots, every where alarmed, assembled at Rochelle, determined to throw off the royal authority, and erect a republic on the model of the dutch.

A. D. The constable, Luines, equally ignorant and
 1621. presumptuous, imagining that he could crush this formidable party, undertook the war; and Lewis, in person, sat down before Montauban; but had the mortification of being obliged to raise the siege. Two great captains, the duke of Rohan, and his brother Soubise, were at the head of the protestants. Luines died soon after this disgraceful expedition; and the brave and ambitious Lefdigueres abjured calvinism to gain the constable's sword. Peace was at last concluded with the protestants, who obtained a confirmation of the edict of Nantz.

The french councils now began to assume more vigour. Cardinal Richelieu no sooner got a share in the administration, which in a short time he entirely governed, than turning his eyes on the state of Europe, he formed three mighty projects: to subdue the turbulent spirit of the french nobility; to reduce the rebellious hugonots; and to crush the encreasing power of the
 house

house of Austria. But, in order to carry these great designs into execution, it was necessary to preserve peace with England. This Richelieu perceived, and accordingly negotiated a treaty of marriage between Charles, prince of Wales, and Henrietta of France, sister of Lewis XIII. But Richelieu could not immediately carry his projects into execution; a powerful faction at court opposed him in every measure. Gaston, duke of Orleans, the king's brother, was his mortal enemy; the queen mother herself, was become jealous of him; and Lewis was more attached to him through fear than affection. But the bold and ambitious spirit of Richelieu triumphed over every obstacle; it discovered and dissipated all the cabals and conspiracies formed against him, and at length made himself absolute master of the king and kingdom.

CHAP.
LIV.
A. D.
1624.

During these cabals in the french court, the hugonots shewed, once more, a disposition to render themselves independent; and in that spirit they were encouraged by the court of England. The reason assigned by some historians for this step is very singular. The duke of Buckingham, when employed to bring over the princess Henrietta, had fallen in love with the queen of France. The return that he met with, how trivial soever, encouraged him to project a new embassy to that court; but Richelieu, reported to have been his rival in love, as well as in sway, made

CHAP.

LIV.

made Lewis fend him a message that he must not think of such a journey. Buckingham swore that "he would see the queen in spite of all the power of France;" and accordingly determined Charles in favour of the hugonots. Thus do ridiculous caprices become the spring which sets governments in motion, and a wrong choice exposes princes to irreparable misfortunes.

Richelieu then executed one of the most glorious enterprises in his ministry. He attacked Rochelle, the bulwark of the hugonots, shut up the port against the english, by a dyke, which was amazingly constructed in the sea, and commanded the troops in person, with all the valour and skill of an experienced general. In vain did the mayor, Guiton, shewing a dagger, and laying it upon the council table, declare, that with that dagger he would stab the first who spoke a word of surrendering. In vain did the two dutcheffes of Rohan animate the courage of the besieged by their example. Buckingham, who was on the point of setting sail with a new fleet, having been assassinated, the english arrived too late, and were repulsed before the dyke. After eleven months resistance, the inhabitants of Rochelle, exhausted by all the horrors of famine and war, were constrained to submit. They lost their privileges; their fortifications were destroyed;

A. D.

1628.

destroyed; but they were left in possession of their property, and liberty of conscience. CHAP.
LIV.

From this æra we may date the aggrandisement of France; she now began to take the lead in the affairs of Europe, and her independent nobles to sink into the condition of servants of the court.

Ferdinand II. whom you have seen triumphant over the palatine and evangelical union, continued to carry every thing before him in the empire. He now thought the time was come for realizing that idea which he had long revolved, of reducing the electoral princes to the condition of *grandees* of Spain; and the bishops, to the state of imperial chaplains. Sensible, however, of the danger of alarming both religions at once, he resolved to begin with the protestants: and accordingly issued an edict, ordering them to restore, without loss of time, all the benefices and church lands which they had held since the peace of Passau. The protestants, in order to save themselves from that robbery with which they were threatened, and which was already begun in many places, secretly concluded a treaty with Gustavus Adolphus, king of Sweden. But before we introduce this deliverer of Germany, let us cast an eye on the northern kingdoms, which had no concern with the general system of Europe, and scarce offered any thing


A. D.
1630.

CHAP. thing interesting from the death of Gustavus
 LIV. Vasa.

Eric Vasa, the son of Gustavus, being a dissolute prince, was dethroned by the states of Sweden, in 1568. He was succeeded by his brother John; who, after attempting in vain to re-establish the catholic religion, died in 1592, leaving the crown to his son Sigismund, already elected king of Poland. Sigismund, like his father, being a zealous catholic, and the swedes no less zealous lutherans, they deposed him in the year 1600, and raised to the throne his uncle Charles IX. The poles attempted in vain to restore Sigismund. Charles swayed the sceptre till his death; and was succeeded in 1611 by his son, the celebrated Gustavus Adolphus.

Russia, during that period, was a prey to civil wars. John Basilovitz, dying in 1584, left two sons, Theodore and Demetrius. Theodore, at the instigation of Boris, his prime minister, ordered his brother Demetrius to be murdered. He himself died soon after; and Boris was proclaimed king. Meanwhile a young man appeared in Lithuania, under the name and character of Demetrius, pretending that he had escaped out of the hands of the assassin. Assisted by a polish army, he entered Moscow in 1605, and was proclaimed czar without opposition; but the imposture being discovered, he was put to death.

Three

Three other false Demetrius's started up, one after another. CHAP.
LIV.


Denmark affords nothing deserving our attention during the reign of Frederick II. nor during the reign of his son Christian IV. who was chosen general of the protestant league in Germany ; but his transactions, while vested with that command, are too unimportant to merit a particular detail.

Sweden alone, during those ages, of all the northern kingdoms, yields a spectacle worthy of observation. No sooner was Gustavus seated on the throne, though only eighteen years of age, than he signalized himself against the danes, the prussians, and the poles. An advantageous truce gave him leisure to take part in the troubles of Germany, and to exhibit more fully those heroic qualities which will ever be the admiration of mankind.

The tranquility of Europe, the liberty of Germany, the interest of the protestant religion, all contributed to furnish reasons or pretences for Gustavus to turn his arms towards Ferdinand. Fewer motives were sufficient to inflame the heart of a hero.

Luckily his political talents were equal to his courage. He negotiated alliances with all powers. Charles I. sent him six thousand men ; and Richlieu concluded a treaty with him, by which Gustavus obliged himself to keep up an army of thirty- A. D.
1631.

CHAP. thirty-six thousand men, for which he was to re-
 LIV. ceive an annual subsidy of twelve hundred thou-
 sand livres.

Gustavus had entered Pomerania when this treaty was concluded, made himself master of Frankfort, Colberg, and several other places. He attacked the imperialists before Leipfic, headed by count Tilli, and totally defeated them. This famous general was killed soon after in disputing with the swedes the passage of the Lock. Walstein still remained to the emperor: this renowned warrior repulsed Gustavus, who attacked him in his intrenchments near Nuremberg; recovered Bohemia, and invaded Saxony, where he took Leipfic. The king of Sweden flew to the assistance of the elector; but the battle of Lutzen put an end to the career of the great Gustavus: he fell in the middle of a complete victory, which was finished by Bernard, duke of Saxe Weimar, his lieutenant general. No prince, ancient or modern, seems to have possessed in so eminent a degree as Gustavus, the united qualities of the hero, the statesman, and commander; that intuitive genius which conceives, that wisdom which plans, and that combination and courage which gives success to an enterprise. He was succeeded by his daughter Christiana, then only six years of age; and the government was managed by the chancellor Oxenstierna.

A. D.
1632.

The

The emperor become jealous of the great powers which he had granted to Wallstein, whose insolence knew no bounds; deprived him of the command; upon which that general entered into a conspiracy, when the emperor caused him to be assassinated, and gave the command to the archduke Ferdinand.

CHAP.
LIV.

Meantime the swedes felt the vicissitudes of war. The imperialists having besieged Nordlingen in Suabia, Weimar came to the assistance of the place; and attacking the besiegers, who were greatly superior in number, lost the battle, with about sixteen thousand men.

A. D:
1634.

This defeat threw the protestants into the utmost consternation and despair. The elector of Saxony went over to the emperor; and the following treaty with the court of Vienna was at length signed at Prague by all the protestant princes, except the landgrave of Hesse Cassel:

A. D:
1635.

“ The protestants, shall retain, for the space of
 “ forty years longer, the benefices which they had
 “ enjoyed since 1552. The exercise of the pro-
 “ testant religion shall be freely permitted in all
 “ the dominions of the empire, except the king-
 “ dom of Bohemia, and the provinces belong-
 “ ing to the house of Austria; that the duke of
 “ Bavaria shall be maintained in the possession of
 “ the palatinate, and that the empire should raise
 “ an army to drive out the swedes and french.”

CHAP. In consequence of this pacification, almost the
LIV. whole weight of the war fell upon the swedes and
french, with whom Oxenstiern had concluded a
fresh treaty; and a french army marched into
Germany, in order to support the duke of Saxe
Weimar. But the success of these new hostilities
must be the subject of a future chapter.

CHAP. LV.

*A View of Europe, from the Treaty of Prague in 1635,
to the Peace of Westphalia in 1648.*

CARDINAL RICHELIEU, though involved CHAP.
LV.
in troubles, and surrounded by conspiracies, resolved upon an open war against the whole house of Austria; a hazardous undertaking, but well calculated for securing him in his station. He made himself necessary, by multiplying the difficulties of government. Besides, the glory of the state was connected with the interest of the minister, provided resources could be found equal to the greatness of the design.

Richelieu concluded an alliance with Holland, in hopes of sharing the low countries; and he sent a herald to Brussels, in the name of his master, to declare war against Spain. A treaty was at the same time entered into with the duke of Savoy, in order to strengthen the french interest in Italy.

But none of these events, however, answered the political views with which they were framed. The spaniards overrun Picardy, and the count of Galas, the imperial general, and the duke of Lorraine, ravaged Burgundy; but by the vigorous measures of Richelieu, fifty thousand men were suddenly assembled, and the spaniards and fle-

CHAP. mings found themselves obliged to evacuate the
 LV. kingdom.

During these transactions, Ferdinand II. died, and was succeeded by his son Ferdinand III. whose accession made no alteration in the state of the war. Though the swedish army, under the command of Bannier, had gained a glorious victory at Wistock, they found themselves closely pressed by general Galas. Weimar lost a battle, in which the duke of Rohan was killed by his side; but he afterwards gained eight successive victories in 1638. The decisive battle of Rheinfeld, put into his hands the two imperial generals, Savelli, and the famous John de Werth.—Weimar died the next year, while his whole thoughts were taken up with his vast designs. The swedes retook Pomerania, which they had lost; advanced as far as Prague, and fell upon Silesia. Germany was deluged with blood, and overrun with hideous ruin; every day its wounds bled a fresh.

A. D.
1640.

The house of Austria was not more fortunate in other quarters. Catalonia revolted, and Portugal threw off the spanish yoke. The catalans were desirous of forming a republic; but being too weak to resist the forces of Philip IV. gave themselves up to France.

The portuguese were more successful in their struggle for independency. An impenetrable conspiracy had been formed for upwards of three
 years,

years, in favour of the duke of Braganza, whose grandfather had been unjustly deprived of his right to the crown by Philip II. The conspirators effected their design, almost without the loss of blood : the spanish governor and his secretary were the only victims sacrificed to public vengeance. The duke of Braganza was proclaimed king, under the name of John IV. the spaniards disappeared, and Portugal only changed its master.

CHAP.

LV.

A. D.

1640.

Philip, sunk in a disgraceful lethargy, was entirely ignorant of this strange piece of news, while it echoed through every corner of Europe ; but at last there was a necessity to acquaint him with the truth. “ Sire,” said Olivarez, “ the duke of Braganza has been unwise enough to cause himself to be elected king of Portugal ; you will gain by it a confiscation of all his estates. Let order be taken for it,” replied Philip, and continued his amusements.

Meantime Bannier died after an unsuccessful attempt against Ratibon. Torstenfon, the worthy successor of so eminent a general, met with the greatest success from the time that he was put at the head of the army in 1642. He took Leipzig, after cutting in pieces the imperial and saxon troops.

The death of cardinal Richelieu, and soon afterwards his master Lewis XIII. gave great alarm to the swedes : they were doubtful of the politics of the new administration ; and began to think of

A. D.

1643.

CHAP. concluding a separate treaty with the emperor ;
 LV. but their fears were soon removed by the steady
 measures of cardinal Mazarine, who shewed him-
 self no unworthy successor of Richlieu, whose plan
 he pursued, and who made up by address what
 he wanted in genius.

About this time a young hero sprung up to do
 honour to France during the minority of Lewis
 XIV. who was only four years old at the death of
 his father. This was the celebrated duke d'En-
 guien, afterwards honoured with the title of the
 Great Condè, who in the plains of Rocroi, cut to
 pieces the famous walloon and castalian infantry,
 with an inferior army, and took Thionville. He
 next joined the famous Turenne with a reinforce-
 ment on the Rhine ; and these two generals at-
 tacked the count de Merci near Friburg, with
 such impetuosity, that notwithstanding his advan-
 tageous situation, he was obliged to retire with
 considerable loss.

While Condè was enjoying his glory in Paris,
 A. D. Turenne, who commanded the army in Germany,
 1645. was defeated at Mariendahl by the count de Merci.
 On this news Condè set out, joined Turenne, at-
 tacked Merci near Nordlingen, and gained a third
 victory as glorious as the preceding. The illust-
 rious Merci fell, covered with honour.

The prince then marched to take Dunkirk from
 A. D. the spaniards, but was sent into Catalonia, where
 1669. he miscarried at the siege of Lerida : however,
 the

the following year he retrieved his credit by the battle of Lens, which he gained over the emperor's brother, the archduke Leopold. CHAP.
LV.
}

Ferdinand III. wearied out with so many shocks, was at length obliged to conclude the peace of Westphalia. By this famous treaty, the french and swedes gave laws to Germany. The disputes between the emperors and the princes of the empire, which had lasted for above seven hundred years, was at length happily terminated.

The war, however, between France and Spain, continued with various success till the treaty of the Pyrenees, in 1660.

C H A P. LVI.

England and Ireland during the Reign of James I.

CHAP. **T**HE english throne being left vacant by the
LVI. death of Elizabeth, James of Scotland, was immediately proclaimed king by the lords and
A D. privy council. He was great grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. The crown
1603. of England, therefore, passed from the family of Tudor, to that of Stuart, with as much tranquility as ever it was transmitted from father to son.

James I. was learned with pedantry, a theologist with bigotry, and pacific from weakness of character, a slave to favourites unworthy of his countenance; yet extremely jealous of his authority, which he looked upon as a right inherent to the crown. Being an infant when his mother, Mary Stuart, was dethroned, he had been educated in the protestant religion: and some of the english catholics, enraged at not finding in him the indulgence with which they had flattered themselves, formed the third year after his accession, one of the most diabolical plots, recorded in the history of mankind. The event to which I allude is the gunpowder treason.

A. D.
1605.

Thirty-six barrels of gun-powder were concealed under the parliament house, to bury, in one grave, the king, the royal family, the peers
of

of the realm, and the commons. Lord Mount-
eagle having luckily received a billet, warning
him to absent himself from the meeting, because
they would receive a *terrible blow*, communicated
the information to James, who, alone, unriddled
the secret. The greatest part of the conspirators
died, with their arms in their hands.

CHAP.
LVI.

After escaping this danger, James, notwithstanding the natural indolence of his temper, thought it necessary to attend to the disordered state of Ireland.

The arms of Elizabeth, in Ireland, under the conduct of lord Mountjoy, had borne down all resistance; but, on the death of the queen, and accession of James, the natives, in several parts, discovered a resolution not to submit to the injunctions of government, with respect to religion. To be forced from their altars, to be stripped of their possessions, and to be harassed by penal laws, for not violating the dictates of their conscience, appeared to them very injurious treatment.

Sir Cahir O'Dogherty, a powerful chief in Ulster, considering the present opportunity to be favourable, determined to expel the despoilers of his native land, and recover to his countrymen their long lost privileges. With this view, he assembled his followers, stormed the fort of Culmore, and put the garrison to the sword. He next proceeded to Derry, which he also took, and
burned

CHAP.
LVI.

burned to the ground. However, not being well seconded by his countrymen, he was defeated, and slain by Sir Arthur Chichester, who acted as deputy to lord Mountjoy. In reward for this piece of service, his majesty granted him the territory of Inishowen, which belonged to O'Dogherty, a scope of land of great extent.

Measures were now taken to establish the public tranquillity, and prevent insurrections. A proclamation of oblivion and indemnity was published by his majesty. Circuits were established, justice administered, oppression banished, and crimes and disorders of every kind severely punished. Every hope of recovering their independence being extinguished, the people, in general, surrendered their lands, and received them back as english tenure.

James endeavoured, but without effect, to establish episcopacy among the presbyterians of Scotland. He justly looked upon bishops as the supporters of the royal authority, and openly said, "No bishop, no king." But these fanatics, breathing the love of independence, drew from thence a new motive to resist him; he never could convince, nor reduce them. The english puritans, animated by the same spirit in the succeeding reign, destroyed the crown.

The imprudent conduct of James paved the way for that fatal revolution. By perpetually insisting upon the maxims of arbitrary power, which

which the Tudors had followed without opposition, he gave birth to republican ideas. The people reasoned on authority, discussed its principles, investigated its source, went back to the times when it was confined within very narrow limits, drew from history and ancient literature sentiments of liberty, which conjunctures would necessarily disclose, and thought they had a right to struggle against prerogative. The parliament of 1610 made bold attempts in this way, and was dissolved with indignation.

CHAP.
LVI.

A. D.
1615.

Robert Carr, earl of Somerset, his minion and minister, was at that time supplanted by another favourite. This was George Villiers, who was at once created duke of Buckingham, master of the horse, and high admiral. The king, in order to raise money to supply the necessities of his new favourite, restored to the dutch, for a trifling sum, Brill, Flushing, and Rammekins, three important places, which had been put into the hands of Elizabeth, as pledges for the money she had lent to the republic. He also raised two hundred thousand pounds by the titles of baronet.

James had formed a system of policy for attaching himself intimately to the court of Spain, that it might assist him in recovering the palatinate for his son-in-law; and to this system he sacrificed the brave Sir Walter Raleigh, on a charge of having committed hostilities against
the

CHAP. the spanish settlements in the West-Indies. He
 LVI. also negotiated a marriage between his son,

A. D. Charles, and the infanta of Spain. Young Charles,
 1623. impatient of delays, by the advice of Buckingham, and accompanied by that rash favourite, had executed the romantic project of going to pay his court to that princess in person. To make this adventure complete, the duke of Buckingham, who had fallen in love with the duchess of Olivarez, affronted the duke her husband, who was prime minister, broke off the match with the infanta, and brought the prince of Wales back again to England as suddenly as he had taken him away. He immediately set on foot a treaty of marriage between Charles and the princess Henrietta, of France, and succeeded in his negotiation.

A. D. James did not live, however, to see the celebration of the nuptials. He died in the fifty-ninth year of his age, after a reign over England of twenty-two years,
 1625.

CHAP. LVII.

*England, from the Accession of Charles I. to the final
Abolition of the Monarchy.*

WE now come to a remarkable æra in the en-
glish history, when liberty struck deep roots; CHAP.
LVII.
when not only the usurpations, but the just pre-
rogatives of the crown, were disputed and wrested
from it. Horrid scenes of violence served as a
prelude to the harmony of a legal constitution. A. D.
1625.
The whole government seemed not only thrown
into confusion, but annihilated; yet order sprung
from this chaos.

When James I. imprudently advanced in the maxim of absolute authority, without having the strength necessary to support it, he only irritated the people, excited men of warm tempers to fatal disputes, and exposed the crown to the attacks of the parliament. Men's minds were set to work: they acquired new lights, and knowledge sufficient to discern that the royal prerogative had its limits; but they were too much heated not to overleap those of the national liberty. From the shock of those different interests, from those overstrained opinions, necessarily issued devouring flames.

Charles

CHAP.
LVII.

Charles I. though endowed with all the qualities of an amiable and virtuous prince, yet from his desire to put in practice the principles of his father, which were not contested under the Tudors, plunged from one abyss to another. So early as the second year of his reign, the commons ventured to impeach Buckingham, the favourite minister. Charles forbid the impeachment, and demanded a speedy subsidy; giving them to understand, that in case of refusal, he could very easily abolish parliaments, as had been done by so many other monarchs.

This indiscreet threat was suddenly followed by a stroke of arbitrary power. Two members of parliament were put in prison; but the commons refused to deliberate till they should be enlarged. Scarce was that done, when the disputes against the rights of the crown were renewed. The parliament was dissolved, and taxes were levied by force; the murmurs increased, and the royal authority was more weakened; the necessary consequence of a false system, which makes men advance with obstinacy, and recede with timidity.

The war undertaken against France, in favour of the inhabitants of Rochelle, made it necessary to convoke a new parliament, where the same causes produced the same effects. The famous
A. D. 1628. *petition of rights*, was drawn up by the lower house, requiring, that no person may be forced

to any gift, loan, benevolence, or tax, without the consent of parliament; that no person may be sued, imprisoned, or molested, in case of refusal. In a word, that no denizen may be arrested or detained by order of the king. In vain did the peers endeavour to make some modifications in this bill. The commons were untractable, and the king gave way, in order to obtain supplies.

CHAP.
LVII.

Buckingham's murder did not put an end to the fermentation; it was even more heated by the taking of Rochelle. Charles now dissolved this turbulent assembly, and made peace with France and Spain, that he might not have occasion any longer for money. At the same time he chose an excellent minister in Wentworth, earl of Strafford, formerly a zealous defender of liberty in the house of commons.

All the king's œconomy could not supply the want of subsidies. It was necessary to have recourse to old expedients. To the duty of tonnage and poundage, and the ordinary methods of prerogatives, was added a tax for the shipping. Hampden, a spirited patriot, refused to pay it; upon which he was sued, and the cause was pleaded twelve days. Although he was cast, a trial of this kind taught the people but too well to struggle against the crown.

Unfortunately for Charles, he put his conscience into the hands of Laud, archbishop of Canterbury, who was as great a bigot as himself,

CHAP. self, both in church and state. Laud advised
 LVII. him to persecute the puritans, and introduce
 the religion of the church of England into Scotland. The scots upon this formed secret connections with the discontented english, and invaded England: Charles marched against the rebels, but was disarmed by an appearance of submission. Scarcely had the scots ceased to dread him, when they renewed their attempts, and civil war again became unavoidable. It being impossible to get any more money, Charles at last assembled a parliament, after an interval of nine years. But he found it insensible to his wants, violent against his prerogative, and dissolved it according to custom. With the generous assistance of Laud, Strafford, and other noblemen, he raised an army; but could not hinder the scots from penetrating into England, and taking Newcastle.

A. D.
 1640.

The dissolution of four parliaments was an unlucky prognostic, and he summoned a fifth, without foreseeing that he was to fall its victim. This dreadful assembly, where the republican spirit was invigorated by the fanaticism of the puritans, began with a bold and decisive stroke. The commons impeached Laud and Strafford of high treason. Strafford, after a long trial, was condemned, under pretext of some arbitrary acts, which were sufficiently justified by ancient custom, and the necessity of the conjunctures. The
 mad

mad populace cried aloud for the blood of this loyal nobleman : the virtuous Strafford exhorted the king to make that sacrifice ; and Charles was weak enough to sign this fatal act, which shewed his subjects the way to shed blood still more precious. Laud was not executed till three years after.

CHAP.
LVII.

By a deplorable fatality the flame caught Ireland in its turn, where the civil wars were re-kindled. The irish in general still lamented secretly the deprivation of their ancient rights, and longed with anxiety to be restored to them. They would have insensibly forgotten the privileges they had lost, and have been reconciled to their station, had the english treated them kindly. Instead of this, they were partial, took every advantage of their weakness, and scourged them with the heavy hand of oppression.

From these causes, and the favourable circumstances of the times, a scheme was formed by some of the principal natives of a general insurrection. Roger O'Moor, the head of a distinguished family, which had greatly suffered by the injustice of the english, took an active part on the present occasion. He maintained a close correspondence with lord M'Guire and Sir Phe-lim O'Neil, the most powerful of the old irish. An attempt to surprize the castle of Dublin being defeated, the insurgents gave themselves up, without restraint, to the impulse of sanguinary

CHAP
LVII.

A. D.
1641.

passions. To put numbers of defenceless protestants to death in cold blood ; to drive them in a winter season from their habitations to the open fields, where they were exposed to perish by the accumulated evils of cold, nakedness, and famine, were shocking acts of cruelty. Nature shrinks from the dreadful scene : to dwell upon it would be no less painful than inconsistent with the limits of this undertaking.

Charles was in Scotland, endeavouring to appease the troubles, when he received the news of the insurrection, and immediately demanded assistance against the irish rebels. The scotch parliament granted but a very small matter ; and that of England, catching at an offer which he imprudently made them, to commit the management of the war to their prudence and care, levied money, and collected arms, under the pretence of succouring him, but really with a design to turn them against him.

It would have been difficult for a strong and skilful hand to hold the helm in so severe a storm : but Charles seemed to throw himself upon the rocks. He went in person to the house of commons to seize five members. This act of Charles was resented as high treason against his people ; and the commons rejected all offers of satisfaction he could make them. Charles quitted London, where he was no longer in safety ; the queen was insulted by the fanatics, and both
sides

sides turned their thoughts on war, which was now unavoidable. Misfortunes called forth the king's virtues. Almost all the nobility and the principal gentlemen embraced his party. The parliamentarians had on their side the city of London, and most of the trading towns. They were master of the sea-ports, the fleet, and the revenue.

CHAP.
LVII.
{

The first hostilities turned to the advantage of the king. The rebels were defeated in several engagements. The scots were invited to come to their assistance ; and they accordingly invaded England anew, with about twenty thousand horse and foot.

The first fatal blow the king's army received was at Marston-moor. This victory was owing chiefly to the courage and conduct of Oliver Cromwell, who now began to play an important part. He distinguished himself in the sects of independents : they equally hated the presbyterians and loyalists ; and such was their management, under the direction of Cromwell, that a plan was formed for dismissing the earls of Essex and Manchester, and the heads of the presbyterians, from the parliament's service, and for introducing Fairfax, who, though a man of integrity, had but a weak understanding, and always suffered himself to be duped by Cromwell's artifices.

A. D.
1644.

CHAP.
LVII.

A. D.
1645.

Every thing now operated towards the destruction of Charles. Prince Rupert, whose impetuous courage had already drawn him into several errors, determined the king to a battle, without waiting for a reinforcement, which was to join him in a short time; and the rebels gained a decisive victory at Naseby. After this battle, Charles underwent an uninterrupted succession of misfortunes of every kind. Upon the point of being besieged in Oxford, he put himself into the hands of the scots, who were laying siege to Newark. Though they received him with appearances of respect, they extorted from him orders to the governors, for surrendering the strong places, and soon after sold him to the english parliament for four hundred thousand pounds: an infamous bargain; after which we ought not to be surpris'd at any deed of horror.

The parliament having the king in their hands, was all-powerful. These pretended defenders of liberty were become the oppressors of the nation, and the laws; and carried their despotism infinitely beyond what they had so grievously reproached in their sovereign. The army resolving to destroy this odious tyranny, in order to set up one of their own, carried off Charles, marched to London, gave law, and oppressed the parliament.

Charles

Charles having made his escape, was imprudent enough to put himself into the hands of Hammond, the parliament's governor of the isle of Wight. The army once more seized upon the king's person, brought him prisoner to London, carried him before a mock court of justice of their own erecting, and after a sham trial, he was executed on a scaffold before his own palace. If the rebels triumphed, at least the body of the people opened their eyes in consternation, felt the pangs of remorse, and looked with horror on a crime not to be paralleled in the history of any age or nation.

CHAP.
LVII.

A. D.
1649.

It will now be proper to cast our eyes on the continent, before we carry further the affairs of England.

C H A P. LVIII.

The Continent of Europe, from the Peace of Westphalia, to the Pyrennean Treaty, in 1659, and the Peace of Oliva, in 1660.

CHAP. LVIII. **L**EWIS XIV. was yet in his minority, and discovered no symptoms of that ambitious spirit which afterwards spread terror over Europe. A. D. 1648. Anne of Austria, the queen regent, reposed her whole confidence in cardinal Mazarine. It was impossible that a foreigner, who was master of the government, could avoid becoming an object of envy, hatred, and cabals. The coadjutor, archbishop of Paris, afterwards the famous cardinal de Retz, a man of a restless, intriguing, seditious, and libertine character, encouraged the enemies of the court, and soon kindled a civil war. The great Condè, who had at first supported the government, revolted; and Turenne, who had opposed it, became a loyalist. Thus the heroes of their country attacked, and defended it alternately, as they were hurried away by a kind of infatuation, or brought back by motives of interest, or a sense of duty.

The king, his mother, and his minister, had very near being seized at Gien, by the prince of Condè, but were saved by the abilities of Turenne;

renne ; and the court, under the protection of its defender, took the road to Paris, where the battle of St. Anthony was fought in the suburbs of that name. The two generals did wonders on that occasion, and victory declared for the royal army ; when the daughter of the duke of Orleans caused the cannon of the Bastile to be fired, which forced Turenne to retreat.

CHAP.
LVIII.

A. D.
1652.

As the hatred against the minister seemed implacable, the king consented to his removal, and dismissed him. The duke of Orleans was banished, cardinal de Retz was imprisoned, and Condè being unsuccessful in his rebellion, had joined the spaniards. To these storms succeeded so still a calm, that Mazarine again appeared peaceably at court, resumed all his authority, and saw himself courted by every body.

Weak as the spaniards were, they had found means to turn the dissensions of France to their advantage. They retook Barcelona, and stormed Gravelines and Dunkirk. Turenne marched to the relief of Arras, which was besieged by the archduke Leopold and the prince of Condè ; forced their lines, and left Condè only the glory of making an admirable retreat.

Mazarine having just made an alliance with Cromwell, the joint forces of France and England besieged Dunkirk, under the command of Turenne ; and Don John of Austria, and the prince of Condè, who came with an army to

A. D.
1658.

CHAP. LVIII. { relieve it, being repulsed with great loss, the city was taken, and delivered up to the english, as had been agreed upon with Cromwell. At length peace was concluded between France and Spain, near the Pyrennean mountains, by the two chief ministers of state on both sides, Mazarine, and Don Lewis de Haro ; by virtue of which France was to keep Rouffillon, and the greatest part of the places which were taken in the Netherlands. Mary Theresa, the infanta, was to be married to Lewis XIV. and the prince of Condè to be received into favour again. In the year following died Mazarine, and left the reins of government to Lewis XIV. who had become impatient of a yoke which he was afraid to shake off.

A. D.
1659.

The affairs of Germany, and the northern crowns, now claim our attention.

A. D. 1657. After the death of Ferdinand III. his son Leopold was raised to the imperial throne. The first measure of Leopold's was, the finishing of an alliance, which his father had begun, with Poland and Denmark, in opposition to Sweden. This latter kingdom had been raised to the highest pitch of military reputation, by the victories of Gustavus Adolphus: his daughter Christina, no less ambitious of fame, though neither in the camp nor the cabinet, immortalized her short reign, by declaring herself the patroness of learning and the polite arts. She drew

drew to her court Grotius, Voffius, Descartes, and other eminent men, whom she liberally rewarded. Being pressed by her subjects to marry, which she had determined not to do, she resigned her crown to her cousin, Charles Gustavus, prince palatine of Deux Ponts.

CHAP.
LVIII.
A. D.
1654.

Charles X. had great success against the poles. Warfaw, the capital, was obliged to surrender; and Casimer, the polish king, took refuge in Silesia. He next entered Denmark, then governed by Frederick III. and laid siege to Copenhagen, which must have surrendered, if it had not been relieved by the dutch fleet. He died soon after of an epidemical fever that raged in his camp.

Charles XI. being but five years old when his father died, the swedes laboured to obtain an honourable peace, which was accordingly concluded at Oliva.

A. D.
1660.

C H A P. LIX.

The Commonwealth of England, under Cromwell.

CHAP. **A**FTER the death of the king, the house of
 LIX. commons abolished the house of peers, and de-
 A. D. clared that the monarchy no longer subsisted.
 1649. Cromwell went to subdue Ireland, where the mar-
 quis of Ormond still defended the royal cause. He took by assault the town of Drogheda, and put the garrison to the sword; one person only, as it has been related by some historians, escaping to bear the mournful tidings,

Scotland was soon after subjected to the yoke. Charles II. having no other resource, cast himself into the arms of the scots. He submitted to the humiliating terms imposed by their fanatical zeal; but being more a slave than a king among them, he had scarce a shadow of authority. Cromwell marched against them with the parliament's forces. The scots, who were entrenched on the hills near Dunbar, might have conquered without fighting; but their clergymen, by prophesying a more glorious victory, forced general Lesley to march down and give battle; when Cromwell routed them at the first onset.

A. D. The next year the king boldly passed into
 1651. England, while his oppressor was completing the conquest of Scotland, Cromwell, upon this, re-
 doubled

doubled his activity, attacked the king in Worcester, which he forced with dreadful slaughter. The unfortunate Charles fled in disguise, concealed himself a whole day in an oak, and wandered forty days in the midst of his enemies ; at least nobody had the weakness to betray him, notwithstanding so many motives to turn traitor ; and he found a vessel to convey him to France.

CHAP.
LIX.

The english republic (for the tyrants assumed that majestic title) soon shewed herself formidable to her neighbours. She passed the famous act of navigation, and declaring war against Holland, seven bloody engagements by sea were fought in little more than the compass of one year ; and in the last, which was decisive in favour of England, the dutch lost their brave admiral Van Tromp.

Cromwell, who had the address to get himself declared commander in chief of the army, hearing that the parliament was going to pass a vote contrary to his views, hastened to the house, followed by some soldiers, and drove out all the members. But to leave the nation some shadow of liberty, he formed another parliament, composed of fanatics, and the dregs of the people. However, they made themselves so contemptible, that Cromwell determined to dissolve them, which he did without difficulty.

This shadow of a parliament being dissolved, the officers of their own authority declared Cromwell protector of the commonwealth of England.

If

CHAP. LIX. If he oppressed the state, at least he made it respectable abroad. He obliged Holland to yield the honour of the flag. He took the island of Jamaica from the spaniards; and the famous admiral Blake burnt a spanish fleet at the Canaries, notwithstanding the fire of a battery, and seven redoubts. A great man, and a good patriot, he served the state without loving Cromwell. *We ought to fight for our country, said he, into whatever hands it be fallen.* We have already seen in what manner the protector got possession of Dunkirk.

A. D. 1658. After a most uncomfortable usurpation of four years, eight months, and thirteen days, he died, surrounded by enthusiasts, in the sixtieth year of his age.

Richard Cromwell' succeeded his father without opposition; but had neither the genius nor the resolution necessary for so high a station. Being a man of mild character and simple manners, free from fanaticism, he was from the beginning the sport of factions. Finding himself without any support, he abdicated in 1659, to live in the obscurity of peaceful retirement. His brother, the lord lieutenant of Ireland, in like manner, threw up all his employments. Thus disappeared in a moment the family of that usurper, who had governed his commonwealth with the authority of a despot, and refused the title of king.

CHAP. LX.

*A View of Europe, from the Restoration of Charles II.
to the Peace of Nimeguen, in 1678.*

AFTER Richard Cromwell's abdication, Lambert played in the army the part which had raised Cromwell to the supreme power. But the body of the nation sighed for the restoration of the monarchy; the plan of which a great man formed in secret, and suddenly executed.

CHAP.
LX.

George Monck, a celebrated general, and wise politician, was governor of Scotland, and declared in favour of the *rump* parliament, as it was called, which had been driven out by Lambert. Lambert was abandoned by his soldiers, and could not defend himself. Monck arrived in London without disclosing his intentions. A new parliament was called, which proved favourable to the royal cause; and Charles II. was proclaimed king, and received by the people with transports of joy.

A. D.
1660.

That prince, who was then thirty years of age, mild, amiable, and of a good understanding, might have made himself the idol of his people. Adversity, more proper to form the mind of a sovereign than any other kind of instruction, had given him practical lessons, the use of which is unknown in the pomp and luxury of courts. His clemency saved a multitude of criminals, whom
the

CHAP. the parliament was desirous of excepting from the
LX. indemnity which he had granted; only eleven of
 the regicides were excluded from taking the benefit of it. They died with great firmness, and seemed to consider themselves as martyrs to their civil and religious principles.

Charles was exposed to misfortunes or vexation, by two great faults in his character: he was too fond of pleasure, and had no œconomy. After dissipating the portion of his wife, Catharine of Portugal, he sold Dunkirk to Lewis XIV. in 1662, for four hundred thousand pounds. He also engaged the nation in a war with Holland, for the purpose of diverting part of the parliamentary aids to supply his own profusion. In this war, the sea was covered with the ships of the two nations. The english fleet commanded by the duke of York, gained a victory in 1665; but the grand pensionary, John de Wit, soon repaired that misfortune.

Meanwhile Lewis XIV. declared for Holland, and dispatched the duke of Beaufort with a squadron of forty sail to join the dutch; but this was not effected before a dreadful battle was fought, which lasted four days; when both fleets, as if weary of carnage, retired to their respective harbours. The english afterwards defeated De Ruyter, who making a glorious retreat, lamented that he had escaped so many cannon balls. About this period more than one hundred thousand men
 lost

lost their lives in London by the plague. A fire consumed above thirteen thousand houses in that city, for it was almost entirely built of wood. In the midst of so many calamities, the rage of war was relaxed, negotiations were carried on at Breda, during which Ruyter burnt some ships on the Thames; at last peace was concluded in 1667, by which the english retained possession of New York.

CHAP.
LX.

The shameful conclusion of the dutch war filled the people with indignation; and Charles, in order to recover his popularity, sacrificed the famous lord Clarendon to the national resentment. This virtuous and incorruptible minister was obliged to quit England, and settle in France, where he composed a work worthy of immortality,—the history of the last civil wars in his own country.

The next measure of the king's, namely, the triple alliance, was no less popular, and more deserving of praise; though Lewis XIV. by the treaty of the pyrenees, had renounced all title of succession to any part of the spanish dominions, which might occur in consequence of his marriage with the infanta Maria Theresa, on the death of his father-in-law, Philip IV. he retracted his renunciation, and laid claim to a considerable province of the spanish monarchy, even to the exclusion of his brother-in-law, Charles II. who was an infant.

Lewis

CHAP.
LX.

Lewis, to support his claim, entered Flanders at the head of forty thousand men; the spaniards were in no condition to resist such a force—the french arms carried every thing before them:—this great success of France alarmed the neighbouring powers, and caused the famous triple alliance entered into between England, Holland, and Sweden, for maintaining the balance of power in Europe, and bridling the ambition of Lewis XIV. The haughty conqueror stopped short; he found it necessary to offer peace, which was accordingly concluded at Aix-la-Chapelle.

A. D.
1668.

After the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, France continued equally to increase in strength and splendour—her commerce grew with her navy; Colbert and Louvois laboured with emulation for the glory of the monarch, and that kingdom became an object of admiration as well as jealousy to foreigners.

A. D.
1669.

The turks besieging Candia, one of the principal possessions of Venice, Lewis dispatched seven thousand men, under the command of the duke of Beaufort, to fight against the infidels: but the other nations remaining inactive, it only retarded the taking of the city, which capitulated after a siege of three years.

Lewis XIV. was irritated against the triple alliance, which had stopped him short in the career of his rapid conquests—he could not forgive Holland, which he had succoured against Eng-
land;

land; being therefore resolved to subdue this bold republic, he found means to detach Charles from the alliance; this prince's council was composed of five new ministers, who were nicknamed the *cabal*, from the initial letters of their names, and who gained his confidence by entering into his passions. The project of uniting with France, which would furnish him powerful succours, and afterwards reigning with arbitrary power, was probably hatched by that council; a scheme entirely conformable to the genius of the duke of York, who had great influence over the king.

CHAP.
LX.

Unluckily for the republic, it was divided into factions—John de Wit, and his brother Cornelius, rigid adherents to liberty, had caused the young prince, William III. to be excluded from the stadtholdership. William aspired to the dignity of his ancestors, had a numerous party; and the discord at home increased the dangers from abroad.

Lewis marched at the head of all his forces, accompanied by his most renowned generals, against that little state which could oppose him only with a few mercenary troops. In less than three months the provinces of Utrecht, Overijssel, and Gueldres, were conquered. Amsterdam beheld the enemy almost at her gates. Meantime Ruyter gained glory in a sea-fight against the combined fleets of England and France, near Solebay; the Duke of York suffered so dread-

CHAP.
LX.

ful a fire that he was constrained to change his ship. Though this engagement supported the honour of the Dutch flag, yet the republic believed herself inevitably ruined. Some marauders appeared near the capital, and the gates would have been opened had the party been more numerous.

In this dreadful situation the states general sued for peace; their deputies implored the clemency of the victor, but were received by Louvois with insulting haughtiness, and intolerable conditions prescribed; on this news the terror of the people was changed into despair; and despair revived the republican courage. The populace, transported with fury, forgetting the services of the de Wits, and charging them with being the authors of the present calamities, murdered and tore them to pieces. The young prince of Orange being created stadtholder, became the principal support of the state. In order to remove the enemy, the dutch ordered the dykes, which kept out the sea, to be thrown down; Amsterdam, and other towns were surrounded with water; William animated the people, and assured them of speedy assistance from the other powers of Europe, whom he solicited not without success.

England was filled with indignation at the pernicious system pursued by Charles II. The elector of Brandenburg openly declared himself;

self; promised the dutch a body of twenty-thousand men, and engaged the emperor Leopold to furnish them with twenty-four thousand; Denmark, with almost all Germany, entered into this league, and Spain in a short time followed their example.

CHAP.
LX.

At last the popular clamour obliged Charles to conclude a separate peace with Holland, and two hundred thousand pounds was paid him by that republic, in consideration of the expences of the war.

A. D.
1674.

In a short time France was deserted by all her allies, except Sweden. The emperor, with a great part of the empire, Spain, and Denmark, were her enemies as well as Holland; yet she had great resources in the authority of the king, the skill of her ministers, and generals, and the ardour of the nation accustomed to victory. It will not come within our limits to give a particular detail of the events of the war; there are already a sufficient number of books filled with the minute particulars of military actions, and details of human rage and misery; the design of this abridgment is to describe the principal characters of these revolutions, and to remove the multitude of trifling facts, in order to set to view those only which are considerable.

Lewis maintained his ground, alone, against all the enemies he had drawn upon him. He, at one and the same time, furnished Turenne with

CHAP. an army of twenty three thousand men, against
 LX. the imperialists; Condè, with one of forty thousand, against the prince of Orange; and a body of troops were stationed on the borders of Roussillon; a fleet of transports, full of soldiers, were sent to carry the war among the Spaniards, even to the gates of Messina, while he himself marched in person to subdue Franch Compté; in a word, he at once defended himself, and attacked his enemies on every side.

The greatest loss the French arms sustained was the death of the famous Turenne; he was opposed by Montecuculi, a general worthy of being his antagonist; during two months, they rivalled each other in admirable marches, and encampments, foreseeing each others designs; never surprised, and always seizing the smallest advantage. Turenne was making dispositions for a battle, when he was slain by a cannon shot near Staffack.

Condè, who commanded in Flanders, attacked the prince of Orange at Senef, near Mons, where he had three horses killed under him; the field of battle was covered with twenty thousand dead bodies, though the victory remained undecided. Notwithstanding the abilities of the prince of Orange, he still felt the superiority of the French arms; he had raised the siege of Maestricht in 1667, and the duke of Orleans defeated him at Cassel.

Meantime

Meantime negotiations were carried on at Nimègue; the confederates were divided by motives of private interest. France imposed terms of peace, and it was necessary to accept them. The Dutch separated from the confederacy for their own advantage. Here the ambitious prince of Orange, who, though he knew the peace was either concluded, or on the point of being concluded, signalized himself in an odious manner; he attacked the duke of Luxemburgh, near Mons, with his whole forces. That worthy pupil of the great Condè was surprisèd, but not vanquishèd; he even had the advantage. The peace had been signed four days before. What advantage then could the prince of Orange hope from a victory? and how could he wash away the stain of that blood which he wantonly shed? Is mankind then the sport of a few illustrious murderers?

CHAP.
LX.

A. D.
1678.

The spaniards seeing the dutch had accepted of terms of peace, followed their example; and the germans, abandoned by Spain and Holland, signed after all the others, confirming the treaties of Westphalia.

C H A P. LXI.

England, to the End of the Reign of Charles II.

CHAP. ^{LXI.} SO entirely had Charles lost the confidence of his people by his connection with France, that his best measures were supposed to proceed from bad motives; nay, the more popular any measure appeared, the more it was suspected of some dangerous purpose. A general terror prevailed of popery and arbitrary power. The famous Titus Oates, and some other miscreants, forged a plot, charging the papists with a design to murder the king, and to introduce popery, by means of the jesuits. Though nothing could be more ridiculous, and more self-contradictory, than the whole of this forgery, yet it was supported by even more than frantic zeal, on the part of the parliament. The aged and innocent lord Stafford, Coleman, secretary to the duke of York, with many jesuits, and other papists, were publicly executed on perjured evidences. The queen herself escaped with difficulty. The duke of York was obliged to retire into foreign parts; and Charles, though convinced that the whole was an infamous imposture, yielded to the torrent. The
earl

earl of Shaftesbury, who was at the head of the opposition, pushed on the total exclusion of the duke of York from the throne. He was seconded by the duke of Monmouth, the king's illegitimate son; and the bill, after passing the commons, miscarried in the house of peers.

CHAP.
LXI.

The famous *habeas corpus* act against arbitrary imprisonments, was now passed by the parliament. By this act, it is prohibited to send any one to prison beyond sea. Every prisoner, upon his own requisition, must be carried before a court of justice, accused, and tried within a period limited by law; and if restored to liberty by the judges, cannot again be imprisoned for the same cause.

A. D.
1679.

Charles, after dissolving three parliaments, summoned a fourth to meet at Oxford, where he hoped the same seditious spirit would not prevail as had done in London; but his expectations were frustrated. They likewise insisted on the bill of exclusion; and were dissolved.

A conspiracy, formed by the earl of Shaftesbury, into which the duke of Monmouth, the lords Ruffel, Grey, Howard, and others entered, might have overturned the government, if it had not been discovered. Monmouth and Shaftesbury made their escape to Holland; and the excellent lord Ruffel, Algernon Sidney, besides several distinguished protestants, suffered death.

A. D.
1683.

CHAP. Charles ruled with absolute authority till his
LXI. death, which happened in 1685, in the forty-
ninth year of his age. As he left behind him no
lawful issue, his brother was acknowledged, under
the title of James II.

C H A P. LXII.

A Sketch of the Affairs of Europe, from the Peace of Nimeguen, to the Revocation of the Edict of Nantz.

THE general peace proved no restraint upon Lewis's ambition. While the empire, Spain, and Holland, disbanded their extraordinary troops, Lewis kept his in pay. He established judicatories for annexing to the crown all the territories which were formerly dependent upon Alsace, the bishoprics of Metz, Toul, and Verdun, or any of his late conquests. These arbitrary courts enquired into titles buried in the most remote antiquity; they cited the neighbouring princes, and even the king of Spain, to appear before them, and to render homage to the king of France; or to behold the confiscation of their possessions.

CHAP.
LXII.

Straßburg, a very powerful city, whose bridge, over the Rhine, opened a passage into the kingdom, was still free; and Lewis earnestly desired to have it subjected to France. While he employed money and threatnings to influence the magistrates, he caused twenty thousand men to march into the neighbourhood, who soon determined the success of the negotiation. Straßburg capitulated, and preserved its ancient privileges. Alarmed at these ambitious pretensions, the empire

A. D.
1681.

CHAP. LXII. { pire, Spain, and Holland, began to take measures for restraining the encroachments of France : but Spain was yet too feeble to enter upon a new war ; and the imperial armies were required in another quarter, to oppose a more pressing danger.

A. D. 1683. The hungarians, whose privileges Leopold had never sufficiently respected, had broke out into rebellion ; and Fekeli, the head of the insurgents, had called in the turks to support his countrymen. A turkish army of two hundred thousand men advanced to the very gates of Vienna, after laying all waste in its march. The emperor fled to Passau ; and Vienna was on the point of surrendering, when it was relieved by John Sobieski, king of Poland. This magnanimous prince, having joined the imperial troops, attacked the intrenchments of the turks, who being seized with a panic, scarcely made any resistance, and left all to the conquerors.

A. D. 1685. The power of Lewis XIV. was now at its utmost pitch. He sent ships of war against the african pirates. Algiers was bombarded, and sent to beg for mercy. Tunis and Tripoli made the like submissions. Genoa, for some imagined crime, suffered a bombardment, and part of its palace was reduced to ashes. The doge, and four of the principal senators, were obliged to go in person to Versailles, and implore the king's mercy.

After

After the death of Colbert, who had protected the calvinists, Lewis revoked the edict of Nantz, passed by Henry IV. in 1589. Liberty of conscience was abolished; all the protestant churches were destroyed; the ministers were banished; and France was deprived of near six hundred thousand of her most valuable inhabitants, who fled their country, carrying along with them their wealth, their industry, and their manufactures, into England, Holland, and Germany.

About the same time a blind zeal for religion paved the way for the catastrophe of the Stuarts in England, which was followed by a general war against Lewis XIV. We ought to pay our greatest attention to England, when she exhibits those grand scenes in which all the energy of the national character is displayed.

CHAP.
LXII.
}

C H A P, LXIII.

Great Britain and Ireland, from the Death of Charles II. to the Revolution in 1688 ; and the Battle off La Hogue in 1692.

CHAP. **J**AMES II. might have been one of the greatest
 LXIII. kings in Europe, if he had shewn more regard to
 the religion and laws of his country ; but an unfortunate passion for arbitrary power, and an indiscreet zeal for the church of Rome, exposed him to the hatred of his people. Soon after his
 A. D. accession, he went openly to mass, with all the
 1685. ensigns of his dignity ; and even sent an agent to Rome, to make submission to the pope. These were but inauspicious symptoms in the very beginning of his reign ; but the progress fell no way short of the commencement.

The duke of Monmouth, a natural son of Charles, rebelled against his uncle ; whom, in his manifesto, he called a tyrant, and a popish usurper. Monmouth was defeated and executed. James let slip an opportunity of making himself beloved for his clemency ; and made himself detested by his barbarity. On pretence of punishing the guilty, an inhuman officer of the army, (colonel Kirk) and still more, Jefferies, the lord chief justice, bathed themselves in blood ;

and Jefferies, after condemning about five hundred persons, was appointed chancellor of the kingdom. CHAP. LXIII.

James now granted an universal toleration, of which it was evident that the catholics were the true object. Six bishops refused to publish the declaration for liberty of conscience, because it was illegal ; and were therefore immediately sent to prison. However, they had a fair trial, were acquitted by the judges, and the people openly manifested their joy. A. D. 1688.

James had two daughters, Mary, and Anne ; the first married to William prince of Orange ; the second to prince George of Denmark. A revolution might raise William to the throne of England. That profound ambitious politician, seeing his hopes of succession blasted by the unexpected birth of a prince of Wales, fomented the discontents of the people. At length, after repeated invitations, William set out with a fleet of about five hundred sail, in which he had embarked an army of more than fourteen thousand men. He had scarcely landed, on the fifteenth of November, when numbers of the english troops and officers hastened to join him. Churchill, afterwards duke of Marlborough, the favourite of James, did not hesitate to betray his unhappy master. The prince of Denmark, his son-in-law, and even his beloved daughter, the princess Anne, cruelly abandoned him ; upon which he

CHAP. he lost all courage, distrusted his army, dreaded
 LXIII. his parliament, and fled even without trying his
 fortune. He was taken, and refused an interview by the prince of Orange, who sent him prisoner to Rochester, from whence he escaped into France.

The only thing that now remained for all parties, was the settlement of the kingdom. A parliament was summoned, and met simply as a *convention*; because the name of *parliament*, supposes their being convoked by the king. The commons declared, that “James having endeavoured to subvert the constitution, by breaking the *original contract* between king and people, and having violated the fundamental laws, and withdrawn himself from the kingdom, had *abdicated* the government; and that the throne is thereby become *vacant*.” After some keen disputes in the house of lords on the reality of the national contract; on the violation of that contract; and, lastly, on the throne being vacant, the declaration of the commons was received without amendment.

The parliament came next to deliberate, whether a king, or a regent, should be appointed; and upon this occasion the ambition of the prince of Orange was unmasked. He declared to some of the nobility, that he would no longer interfere in the affairs of the kingdom, whether they settled a regency, or assigned the crown to the princess

princess Mary, his wife ;—in a word, if he was only to enjoy a precarious dignity, attached to the life of another person. This threat had its weight. Both houses voted, “ that the prince “ and princess of Orange, should be declared “ king and queen of England.” To this was added a declaration, fixing the rights of the subject, and restraining the royal prerogative.

CHAP.
LXIII.

A. D.
1689.

Before we return to the affairs of the continent, it will be proper first to relate the efforts made by James II. for the recovery of his crown. He was received with marks of the most cordial affection by Lewis XIV. who sent a powerful french squadron to transport the dethroned monarch into Ireland ; and he was speedily followed by fresh succours. He found the irish inclined to serve him ; and was received with transports of joy in Dublin : but the more the catholics testified their zeal, the less did he attempt to conciliate the minds of the protestants. Londonderry, where the protestant religion prevailed, where their minister, Walker, gave his orders, and inspired the inhabitants with enthusiasm, was the first rock upon which he split. He raised the siege of that place, after having lost nine thousand men.

William went over to Ireland, and James wanted to risk an engagement. The two armies having each about thirty thousand men, came in fight of one another on the opposite banks of the Boyne,

A. D.
1690.

CHAP. Boyne, near Drogheda. While William was ex-
 LXIII. amining the ground, a cannon ball grazed his
 } shoulder, and the enemy, believing he was
 killed, gave vent to their joy; but having en-
 couraged his army, by riding along the lines, he
 gave the order of battle for the next day. The
 July 1. action was decisive; and he passed the river
 exposed to the greatest dangers. The duke of
 Schomberg was killed soon after reaching the
 opposite bank, but not before he had broken
 the irish infantry. James did not even appear,
 though it was of so much consequence to him
 to set an example; and France very soon wit-
 nessed his return, still less deserving the sacrifices
 she had made in his favour.

Ireland was entirely subdued by William's ge-
 nerals in two campaigns. St. Ruth, who com-
 manded the irish army, was slain at the battle of
 A. D. Aughrim, and his army totally routed. The re-
 1691. mains of the irish forces took refuge in Limerick;
 and after a siege of six weeks, that important
 place capitulated. Fourteen thousand irish took
 advantage of the permission granted them by the
 articles of capitulation, and bid adieu for ever
 to their native country.

The adherents of James, however, were still
 numerous in the north of Scotland; and the
 cruel massacre of Glenco could not fail to rouse
 the resentment of the jacobites in general. An
 insurrection in favour of the dethroned monarch,

was

they were by their discipline; for the cavalry being broken, the king's baggage plundered, and himself in danger of being made prisoner. The intrepid steadiness and continual fire of the infantry recovered all; and in the end he gained a victory—a presage of greater success.

CHAP.
LXIX.

The king of Prussia was not mistaken in his conjectures; for other powers, invited by his success, took up arms against the queen of Hungary, the title by which she was commonly known. Although France had guaranteed the pragmatic sanction, the duke of Belleisle and his brother succeeded so far as to inspire a resolution contrary to the views of cardinal Fleury. They imagined that the period, so long wished for, was arrived, of finally breaking the power of the house of Austria, and exalting that of Bourbon on its ruins; by dismembering the dominions of Maria Theresa, and placing on the imperial throne Charles Albert, elector of Bavaria, a stipendiary of his Most Christian Majesty.

The moderation and natural equity of Lewis XV. yielded to arguments so flattering to his pride, and the duke de Belleisle was dispatched into Germany, in the double capacity of ambassador and general, to negotiate and settle the whole project.

The elector of Bavaria, who was appointed lieutenant general to the french forces by Lewis XV. immediately made himself master of Passau,

E e

penetrated

CHAP. penetrated into Austria, as far as Lintz; and
 LXIX. Vienna was thought to be in danger. To have
 got possession of the capital would have been a
 decisive blow; but instead of making the at-
 tempt, or pursuing the queen, who had fled for
 shelter to Hungary, the elector, impatient to get
 himself crowned king of Bohemia, invaded that
 country, and took the city of Prague by escalade.
 After the coronation, he went to receive the impe-
 rial crown at Franckfort, and was raised to the head
 of the empire by the name of Charles VII. The
 king of Prussia had in the mean time conquered
 Moravia; and a more deplorable situation than
 that of Maria Theresa can scarcely be imagined.

But even danger procured her resources. The
 speech which she made in latin to the hungarians,
 when she threw herself upon their loyalty, made
 them melt in tears; and drawing their sabres, they
 exclaimed, "*Let us die for our king, Maria Theresa!*"
 They no longer thought of any thing but de-
 fending this princess, who truly deserved to be
 reckoned among the number of great kings.
 England and Holland, not yet declaring them-
 selves, though they guarantied the pragmatic
 sanction, sent her assistance in money.

The enemies of the queen did her still better
 service, by the faults they committed. The
 marechal de Belleisle, who had drawn France into
 this war, conducted her operations but badly.
 Marechal Broglio was associated with him; but

to no purpose, from the misunderstanding that prevailed between the two chiefs. They had too few cavalry ; and prince Charles, brother to the grand duke, harrassed and galled their army with his pandours, croats, and hussars ; a dreadful scourge for a scattered army, easy to be surprised ; and at last the french and bavarian troops were reduced to almost nothing, without having come to any action of importance.

CHAP.
LXIX.

Prague was already evacuated, and the marshal de Belleisle had only the honour of saving about thirteen thousand, the wreck of a great and victorious army, by making a difficult retreat. From the heart of Germany, where they had been victorious, they were obliged to fall back towards the Rhine, to act upon the defensive in that quarter ; and the emperor, Charles VII. could not even save Bavaria ; he had been driven from thence oftner than once, was deprived of his dominions, reduced to the condition of a fugitive, and experienced almost the same fate with his father.

The death of cardinal Fleury, changed the measures of government ; the king took the administration into his own hands, and prepared to command the army—his minister, however able in other respects, had totally neglected the marine, and the english took advantage of that political error.

CHAP.
LXIX.

A. D.
1743.

They supported the queen of Hungary in quality of auxiliaries, in the same manner as France did the emperor; and on both sides the auxiliaries became principals. They tried their strength at the battle of Dettingen, where George II. with his second son, the duke of Cumberland, joined the army, which was commanded by the earl of Stair, a pupil of the famous Marlborough. The *maréchal de Noailles*, at the head of the french army, had cut off the provisions of the allies, by which they were reduced to the necessity of making a dangerous march, where they might be overpowered. By the excellence of his dispositions, he had in a manner made himself sure of a complete victory; but his instructions were not obeyed, and all his measures defeated by impetuosity; a fault which has been often fatal to France. A lieutenant general quitted an advantageous post, where he was commanded to wait, attacked the allies before they fell into the snare, and lost a number of men to no purpose. After a severe action, which lasted three hours, the *maréchal de Noailles* found himself under the necessity of retreating with the loss of five thousand men.

Italy could not escape the conflagration of war. About the end of the year 1741, the duke de Montemar, the spanish general, entered Italy with some forces; but was not fortunate, owing to the superior strength of the king of Sardinia, who

who had joined the austriaus. As to the king of Naples, don Carlos, he was determined by the english. One of their squadrons threatened to bombard the capital, if he did not promise to recall his troops from the spanish army, and gave him only one hour to determine. Not being in a state of defence, don Carlos was obliged to put up with the insult, and therefore gave his promise. Such is the superiority conferred by the empire of the sea!

CHAP.
LXIX.

In consequence of a late alliance between France and Spain, the admirals of their combined fleets, in the harbour of Toulon, resolved to give battle to that of England, by which they had been blocked up; and, if a misunderstanding had not prevailed between the english admirals, Matthews and Lestock, who were both men of courage and ability, the combined fleet must have been utterly ruined.

A. D.
1744.

Meanwhile Lewis XV. made his first campaign and attacked the Low Countries. Courtray, Menin, Ypres, Furnes, and Fort Knock, were very soon taken; and marechal Saxe, natural brother to the king of Poland, covered these sieges with a body of the army. But having suddenly received news that prince Charles of Lorraine had crossed the Rhine, was got into Alsace, and making considerable progress, Lewis abandoned the theatre of his conquests, and hastened to the protection of his provinces.

CHAP. Having arrived at Metz, he received the news
 LXIX. of the king of Prussia being set out to siege Bohemia. Frederick prudently regulated his conduct by his circumstances; although he had made an advantageous peace with the queen of Hungary, he was afraid that, if she became too powerful, she would one day deprive him of the fruits of his conquests; and, therefore, poured into Bohemia, forced Prague, after a siege of ten days, and made the garrison of fifteen thousand men, prisoners of war. That hero seemed invincible.

Prince Charles diligently passed the Rhine, without loss, like a great general, who cannot be surprised; but, however rapid his march, it was not so speedy as the conquest of the prussians; and though he could not prevent them, he had the honour of repairing the misfortune. He obliged the enemy to evacuate Bohemia, crossed the Elbe before Frederick, and advanced into Silesia. Nothing was to be seen but revolutions.

A. D. It might have naturally been expected
 1745. that the death of the emperor Charles VII. would have put an end to the war; but it was kept up by resentment. The english, finding themselves threatened with an invasion, in favour of Charles Edward, son of the pretender, gave vent to their hatred of the french name, as in the time of Lewis XIV. their money flowed in
 all

all quarters with profusion, and all the allies
 seemed to be engaged in their pay. They fur-
 nished five hundred thousand pounds to the
 queen of Hungary, and two hundred thousand
 pounds to the king of Sardinia; they paid a great
 sum to the king of Poland, whom they had
 drawn into the confederacy; and gave sub-
 sidies to the elector of Mentz, and even Cologne,
 the brother of Charles VII. for liberty to raise
 men in his dominions. After long hesitation,
 Holland espoused the same quarrel.

CHAP.
 LXIX.

The leading object in view of Lewis XV. was
 to complete the conquest of Flanders. He ac-
 cordingly laid siege to Tournay, the principal
 town of the dutch barrier, upon which the allies
 were determined to come to an engagement; and
 their army consisting of fifty thousand men, com-
 posed of english, hanoverians, and dutch, ad-
 vanced to that neighbourhood. Marechal Saxe,
 whose last campaign had been a master piece of
 military skill, exhausted by a lingering disorder,
 quitted Paris, saying, "*The business is not living,*
but marching." The king of France, with the
 dauphin, having joined the army, which amount-
 ed to seventy thousand men, observed the evening
 before the action, that since the battle of Poitiers,
 no king of France had gained a signal victory a-
 gainst the english; adding, that he hoped to be the
 first: and his expectation was not disappointed.

CHAP:
 LXIX.

A. D.
 1745.

The famous battle of Fontenoy was fought the 11th of May, 1745. The author of the age of Lewis XIV. has written a detail of this action. We shall only take notice of what is most essential. The dutch, after having twice attacked the post of Antoine, no longer continued to act; but the intrepidity of the english and hanoverians brought France into the greatest danger. The duke of Cumberland, son of George II. by whom they were commanded, advanced into a narrow ground with his troops, formed a close, impenetrable column, exposed to a most dreadful fire. This column penetrated gradually across innumerable obstacles, and by its weight bore down every opposition. The french were repulsed in every quarter; and it was believed the battle was lost. Marechal Saxe several times sent to entreat the king to retire; but Lewis would not quit his post. At last an expedient was hit upon, which was to level four pieces of cannon against the english column; and when the cannon had made some impression, to cause the household troops and irish brigades to join in the charge, by which means the victory was decided. The duke of Cumberland retreated in good order, with the loss of seven thousand men: the french lost ten thousand. “You see upon what the success of battles depend,” said Marechal Saxe to Lewis XV. and thousands of examples serve to shew that they are decided by accidents, or critical moments.

The

The king of Prussia gained two bloody victories over the austrians, under the prince of Lorraine; one near Friburg, the other near Slan-dentz. He also invaded Saxony, and made himself master of Dresden. The king of Poland now found himself under the necessity of suing for peace; and the king of Prussia was heartily tired of the war. A treaty was accordingly concluded between the two monarchs at Dresden. Another treaty was at the same time concluded between his prussian majesty and the queen of Hungary, which secured Frederic III. the possession of Silesia, on condition of his acknowledging the queen's husband, Francis, emperor.

Maria Theresa having no longer any thing to fear from the king of Prussia, sent new troops into Italy. In consequence of this addition of strength, the king of Sardinia surprised Asti, and took seven thousand french, prisoners; and count Brown, an irishman in the service of Austria, took Guastalla and Parma; and these misfortunes were completed by the battle of Placentia, in which, the french and spaniards lost more than eight thousand men killed and wounded, and four thousand taken prisoners. The remainder of the French army arrived at Genoa, but was obliged to abandon it, and hasten to the defence of Provence and Savoy. Genoa, in consternation at the approach of the austrian army, sent four senators

to

CHAP. to receive their orders, and submitted upon the
 LXIX. hardest conditions.

A. D.
 1746.

However, the cruel oppressions with which the people were treated, inspired them with courage, dictated by despair. While the inhabitants were compelled to drag cannon from the arsenal, an austrian officer having rudely struck one of the genoeſe, the people, in a fury, instantly aſſembled, flew to arms, and in a few days became formidable to the oppreſſors, by whom they were deſpiſed. A prince of the family of Doſia, having put himſelf at the head of this multitude, they ruſhed upon the auſtrians, and compelled them to fly.

Soon after this revolution died Philip V. of Spain, and was ſucceeded by his ſon Ferdinand VI. who at firſt embraced with ardour the principles of the union between the two branches of the Bourbon family.

While France was ſuffering irreparable miſfortunes in Italy, ſhe gained the moſt honourable victories in the low countries. Bruſſels was taken in the middle of winter by marechal Saxe; and Antwerp, afterwards, by the king in perſon. Mons, Namur, &c. were rapidly carried; and the battle of Rocou gained over the confederates near Liege, cloſed the campaign 1746.

Although Holland kept up an apparent neutrality, ſhe furniſhed the confederates with every ſuc-

COUR.

cour. Lewis therefore invaded the country in 1747. The french general, Lowendahl, made himself master of Sluys, Sandburg, Hulst, and many other places of importance. Struck with consternation at the progress of the french arms, the inhabitants of the United Provinces clamoured loudly against the ministry of the republic, and demanded a stadtholder; and the states were obliged to renew that dignity, which had been abolished ever since the death of William III. Henry Frizo, prince of Orange, was not only created stadtholder, but that office was rendered hereditary in his family.

A D.
1747.

Meantime the king of France arrived at Brussels, and it was resolved, to undertake the siege of Maestricht; but this enterprize required a battle; and he attacked the allies, commanded by the duke of Cumberland, at Lawfeldt. The action was long and bloody; and if the british troops, who distinguished themselves greatly, had been properly supported, instead of being defeated, they would have gained a complete victory.

After this dear purchased victory, the french laid siege to Bergen-op-Zoom; a place hitherto reckoned impregnable: however, it was taken by count Lowendahl, in three weeks after the trenches were opened. Holland then began to tremble; but another campaign was necessary to bring the evils of war to a conclusion.

CHAP. Two months before the taking of this place,
 LXIX. the bloody battle of Affito complicated the disasters which happened to the french in Italy. The troops of the king of Sardinia were intrenched in the pass of Affito; and though their breastworks were eighteen feet high, defended with palisades and cannon, they were attacked by the french, under the count de Belleisle, whom the piedmontese had nothing to do but to kill for two hours together.

It is now time to give an account of the expedition of Charles Edward, son of the pretender, whose first successes were as surprising as the catastrophe was fatal. That grandson of James II. having formed the design of dethroning George II. embarked in 1745, on board a privateer, with seven officers, twelve hundred stand of arms, and a small sum of money. Some of the heads of clans among the scotch highlanders received him, and declared in his favour; and he very soon had three thousand men under his command. His courage, his example, the fatigues which he underwent at their head, and the life which he led equally hard with that of his followers, inspired them with a degree of enthusiasm. George II. was absent from the kingdom, and almost the whole troops of the nation were serving abroad. Charles Edward having made himself master of Perth, marched quickly to Edinburgh, where he caused himself to be proclaimed

proclaimed regent for his father James. A reward of thirty thousand pounds was promised to whoever would bring him dead or alive.

CHAP.
LXIX.

Meanwhile general Cope having advanced with more than four thousand men, prince Charles made haste to engage them; when his highlanders, who, though inferior in number, and ignorant of discipline, after having fired their pieces, rushed upon the enemy sword in hand, and gained a complete victory. The king made haste to return to England; and, dreading a revolution, recalled his troops from the continent. But the assistance which Charles received from France was insufficient. He advanced into the heart of England without receiving any considerable accession of force, or being joined by any person of distinction. Disappointed in his hopes of being joined by the majority of the people, it was resolved, in a council of war, to march back to Scotland; and their retreat was effected without losing above fifty men.

In fine, though twice a conqueror, he was obliged to retire before the duke of Cumberland, who pursued him to Inverness; and a battle was fought at Culloden the 16th of April, when Charles was defeated, and his whole army routed. Reduced to the necessity of concealing himself in morasses, caverns, and deserted islands, he was exposed to the greatest dangers, suffered every imaginable horror, till he at last he arrived at a part of

A. D.
1746.

the

CHAP. the coast where he was waited for by two french
 LXIX. frigates, and escaped from his enemies. Some
 } scotch peers, and a number of other people, were
 executed. Let us now pause for a time, that we
 may take a view of the naval transactions since the
 commencement of the war. We shall only point
 out the most remarkable enterprises.

Commodore Anson, in 1741, after having burn-
 ed the town of Paita, on the coast of Peru, pro-
 posed to take the galleon, which was sent annually
 from Mexico to Manilla, in the philippine islands.
 He got before it by way of the Pacific Ocean ;
 and having only one ship of his squadron, he
 went to refit at China ; and having discovered the
 galleon, attacked and took her in the year 1743.
 With this rich booty he returned to England
 by the Cape of Good Hope, and arrived in tri-
 umph at the capital in 1744, loaded with trea-
 sure ; which is said to have amounted to 400,000l.
 sterling. His voyage round the world lasted
 three years and a half.

In the year 1745, commodore Warren, with
 colonel Pepperel, took from the french the im-
 portant fortress Louisbourg, in the island of Cape
 Breton. Some vessels richly loaded arrived in
 that port, without suspecting any danger, and
 fell into the hands of the english.

Anson, having been made a vice admiral, de-
 feated the french fleet off Cape Finisterre. Ad-
 miral Hawke, the same year, 1747, gained a se-
 cond

cond victory ; and the french navy was reduced to a single ship. CHAP.
LXIX.

These naval victories, and the sailing of admiral Boscawen with a strong squadron, and a considerable body of land forces, for the East Indies, where it was conjectured he would not only recover Madrafs, which had been taken by the french, but reduce Pondicherry, disposed Lewis XV. seriously to think of peace, and even to listen to moderate terms, notwithstanding the great superiority of his arms in the low countries. He accordingly made advances towards an accommodation both at London and the Hague ; and all parties being heartily tired of the war, the preliminaries of peace were signed at Aix-la-Chapelle, the 30th of April, and the definitive treaty the 18th of October. A. D.
1748.

AN EPI TOM E OF

C H A P. LXX.

A S the Affairs of Europe, from the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 1748, to the Peace of Versailles, in 1763.

CHAP.
LXX.

THE treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was, properly speaking, but a temporary truce. Though the war between England and France was hushed up in Europe, yet in the East and West Indies, it still went forward with undiminished vehemence. The french employed themselves in recruiting and repairing their marine; and had laid a deep scheme for possessing themselves of the british back settlements in America, and for cutting off all communication between the english and the native indians; in which case, their colonies must have been reduced to a narrow slip on the coasts. Fortunately for Great Britain, they disclosed their intention, by entering upon hostilities before they had power to support them.

But not in America alone, but also in Asia, the seeds of a new war were preparing to be expanded on the coasts of Malabar. The english, the french, and several other powers of Europe, had built forts with the original consent of the mogul, who was then emperor of the whole tract: There war between the english and french first began
by

by either power siding with two contending princes of the country; and from being secondaries in the quarrel, at length became principals. Thus the war was kindled up in every part of the world. Most other national contests have arisen from some principal cause; but this war seems to have been produced by the concurrence of several; or it may be more properly considered as the continuance of the late war, which was never effectually extinguished by the wretched and defective treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle.

CHAP.
LXX.

The english began a very vigorous exertion in defence of her colonies. Four operations were undertaken in America at the same time. Of these, one was commanded by colonel Monckton, who had orders to drive the french from their encroachments upon the province of Nova Scotia. The second, more to the south, was directed against Crown Point, under the command of general Johnson. The third, under the conduct of general Shirley, was destined to Niagara, to secure the forts on that river; and the fourth, was farther southward still, against Fort du Quesne, under general Braddock.

A. D.
1755.

In these expeditions Monckton was successful. Johnson was also victorious, though he had failed in taking the fort against which he was sent. Shirley was thought to have lost the season for operation by delay. Braddock was vigorous and active;

CHAP. but was defeated and killed, by falling into an
 LXX. ambuscade of the french and indians.

The general indignation that was raised by the want of success in America, drove the english into a spirit of retaliation by sea, where they were sure of success. Admiral Boscawen was ordered, with eleven ships of the line, besides a frigate and two regiments, to sail to the Banks of Newfoundland, where he came up with, and took two french men of war, the rest of their fleet escaping up the river St. Lawrence, by the straits of Belleisle. Orders were now issued for making general reprisals in Europe, as well as in America; and that all the french ships, whether outward or homeward bound, should be stopt, and brought into british ports. These orders were so effectual, that before the end of the year 1755, above three hundred of the richest french merchant ships, and above eight thousand of their best sailors, were brought into english ports.

A. D. While the flames of war were thus breaking
 1755. out between France and England, the southern parts of Europe were visited by a more dreadful calamity than even war itself. A violent earthquake, which shook all Spain, Portugal, and the neighbouring countries, threw the inhabitants into the utmost consternation, and laid the city of Lisbon in ruins. About ten thousand persons lost their lives; and many of the survivors, deprived of their habitations, and altogether destitute

destitute of means of subsistence, were obliged to take up their abode in open fields. The british parliament, though pressed with new demands, generously voted one hundred thousand pounds sterling for the use of the unhappy sufferers. This is one of those instances on which England justly may pride herself.

Meanwhile the people of Great Britain were seized with a shameful panic, notwithstanding their naval superiority, at the rumour of a french invasion. This panic was in some measure dissipated, by the arrival of a large body of hanoverians and hessians, to the number of ten thousand men, for the protection of the kingdom. But new jealousies and fears took place as soon as the alarm of the invasion subsided; the foreign troops being represented, by the dissatisfied part of the nation, as the most dangerous enemies of the state. The attention of the public was, however, called off from that subject, for a time, by the news of the invasion of Minorca, by a french armament under the duke of Richelieu.

On the first intelligence of this unexpected attack, the english government sent out admiral Byng, with ten ships of the line, with orders to relieve Minorca at any rate. When Byng arrived at that island, he had the satisfaction to see the english colours still flying in the castle of St. Philip: but notwithstanding this animating circumstance, he hardly made any attempt for its

CHAP. relief. In a word, Byng, who had a squadron,
 LXX. at least equal to that of the french, was baffled,
 if not defeated, by their admiral, Galiffoniere;
 A. D. and Minorca was surrendered by general Blake-
 1756. ney, after a siege of nine weeks. The loss of
 this island was more shameful, than detrimental to
 England ; but the public cry was such, that the
 king gave up Byng to public justice, and he was
 shot at Portsmouth, for cowardice.

In the mean time the french, after making
 themselves masters of Minorca, were willing to
 second their blow; by an attack upon a country,
 which they were sensible the king of England
 valued still more. Being convinced that they
 could not hold their acquisition against such a su-
 periority as the english were possessed of at sea,
 they made no scruple of declaring, that they
 would revenge all the injuries which they should
 sustain in their colonies, upon the king of Great
 Britain's territories in Germany ; a threat which
 they secretly believed, would soon compel the
 english ministry to accept of such terms as they
 should please to offer ; or in case of perseverance,
 they knew that it would divide the english forces,
 and lead them to a country where she must be
 manifestly inferior. In these hopes they were
 not much disappointed. The court of London,
 eager to procure the security of Hanover, entered
 into a very expensive treaty with the court of
 Russia ; by which it was stipulated, that a body
 of

of fifty thousand russians should be ready to act in the english service, in case Hanover should be invaded. CHAP.
LXX.

This treaty with the russians soon appeared as nugatory as it was expensive. The king of Prussia, whose talents were well known even at that time, but who has since become so famous, took the first opportunity to declare, that he would not suffer any foreign forces to enter the empire, either as auxiliaries, or as principals. This consummate politician had, it seems, been already apprised of a secret negotiation between the russians and the austrians, by which the latter were to enter the empire, and strip him of his late conquest of Silesia.

The king of Great Britain, alarmed at this strong declaration, yet pleased with its professed object, the exclusion of foreign troops, concluded, on that principle, a treaty with the king of Prussia; not doubting but he should still be able to preserve a good understanding with the courts of Vienna and Peterburgh. But the house of Austria, forgetting its jealousy of the house of Bourbon, in its animosity against the prussian monarch, not only entered into a league with France, along with Russia and Sweden, but gave up its barrier in the Netherlands, which had been acquired by torrents of british blood, and millions of british treasure, in order to cement more closely this unnatural confederacy. These new and singular

CHAP.
LXX.

alliances, necessarily drew tighter the bands of union between George II. and his nephew, the king of Prussia.

The preparations for war were at first begun on the side of Austria, who had engaged the elector of Saxony in the general dispute. Great armaments were, therefore, put on foot in Moravia and Bohemia, while the elector of Saxony, under pretence of military parade, drew together about six thousand men, which were posted in a strong situation at Perna. But the intent of these preparations was soon perceived by the vigilant king of Prussia, who resolved to carry the war into the enemies' country, rather than to wait for it in his own.

He accordingly entered Saxony, with a large army; and in the usual strain of civility, demanded, from the elector, a passage through his dominions, which he well knew the possessor was not able to refuse. In the mean time he disguised his suspicions of the elector's having entered into a secret treaty with his enemies; and professed himself extremely pleased with that potentate's promises of observing a strict neutrality. But to carry on the deceit still farther, he entreated, that as the elector's troops were totally unnecessary, in consequence of his pacific disposition, that he would disband them for the present, as he could not possibly have any occasion for their services.

This

This proposal the elector rejected with disdain; and the king, who probably made it to be refused, resolved to turn the occurrence to his own advantage. Such was the situation of the saxon camp, that though a small army could defend it against the most numerous forces, yet the same difficulty attended the quitting it, that impeded the enemy from storming it. Of this circumstance his prussian majesty took advantage; and by blocking up every avenue of egress, he cut off the provisions of the saxon army, and the whole body was soon obliged to capitulate.

CHAP.
LXX.

A. D.
1756.

The king of Prussia thus launched into a tumult of war with all the most potent states of Europe against him, and England only in alliance; went forward with a vigour that exceeded what history can shew, and that may be incredible to posterity. King only of a very small territory, and assisted by an ally, whose situation was too remote to give any considerable succours, attacked and surrounded by his enemies, he still opposed them on every side; invades Bohemia; defeats the austrian general, marechal Brown, at Lowositz; retreats; begins his second campaign near Prague; is upon the point of taking that city, but by a temerity, inspired by success, suffers a defeat. Still, however, unconquered, "Fortune," said he, "has turned her back upon me this day—I ought to have expected it—she is a female, and I am no gallant."

A. D.
1757.

CHAP.
LXX.

“ Success often occasions a destructive confidence—another time will do better.”—We have instances of thousands who have gained battles; but no general ever, before him, acknowledged his errors, except Cæsar.

What the king said of the instability of fortune, shortly began to appear; and she seemed totally to have turned her back upon him. One disaster followed close upon the back of another. The hanoverians, who were joined with him by his treaty with England, had armed in his favour; and commanded by the duke of Cumberland, who appeared, from the beginning, sensible of the insufficiency of his troops to face the enemy, by whom he was greatly out-numbered. He was driven by the duke de Richelieu, the french general, from one part of the country to another; till at length the hanoverian army was obliged to retire towards Stalde; by which means they marched into a country from whence they could neither procure provisions, nor yet attack the enemy with hopes of success. Unable, therefore, by their situation to escape, or by their strength to advance, they were compelled to sign a capitulation, by which the whole body laid down their arms, and were dispersed into different quarters of cantonment. By this remarkable capitulation, which was called the treaty of Closter Seven, Hanover was obliged to submit peaceably to the french

A. D.
1757.

french, who were now determined to turn upon the king of Prussia with undivided forces.

CHAP.
LXX.

The situation of this monarch was become desperate; nor could human foresight discover how he could extricate himself from his difficulties. The french forces, now united, invaded his dominions on one side, commanded by marechal Broglio. The Russians, who for some time had hovered over his dominions, under the conduct of general Apraxin, all at once hastened onward to overwhelm him, marking their way with slaughter and cruelty. A large body of austrians entered Silesia, and penetrating as far as Breslaw, turned to the strong fortress of Schweidnitz; which, after an obstinate defence, they obliged to surrender. Another army, of the same power entered Lusatia, made themselves master of Gittau, and pressing forwards, laid Berlin under contribution. On another quarter, a body of twenty-two thousand swedes pierced into prussian Pomerania, took the towns Anclam and Demmein, and exacted tribute from the whole country.

In this multitude of invaders, it was in vain that the king of Prussia faced about to every incursion: though his enemies fled before him, while he pursued one body, another penetrated from behind: and even while he was victorious, his territories were every day diminishing. The greatest part of his dominions was laid under contribution: most of the strong cities weretaken;
and

CHAP. and he had no resources but in the generosity of
 DXX. the british parliament, and his own extensive abilities.

The succours of the english could be of very little advantage to him, particularly as the hano-verians were restrained by the treaty from acting in his favour. The british ministry, however, conscious that something should be done, planned an enterprize against the coasts of France ; which, by causing a diversion in that part of the kingdom, would draw off the attention of the enemy from Prussia, and give that monarch time to breathe. The descent was to be made at Rochfort, under general Sir John Mordaunt, who was to command the land troops. Nothing could be more promising than the dispositions of this expedition. It sailed the 8th of September ; and admiral Hawke brought both the sea and land forces back on the 6th of October, without the general making any attempt to land on the coast of France,

A, D.
 1757.

The East was the quarter on which success first began to dawn upon the british arms. Colonel Clive defeated Suraja Dowla, nabob of Bengal, Bahar, and Orixá, and placed Jaffier Ally Cawn in the ancient seat of the nabobs of those provinces, Suraja Dowla, who was in the french interest, was a few days after his being defeated, taken by the new nabob Jaffier, Ally Cawn's son, and put to death. This event laid the foundation of the pre-

sent amazing extent of riches and territory, which the english now possess in the East Indies. CHAP.
LXX,

In the mean time, while conquest shined upon the english from the East, it was still more splendid in the western world. But some alterations in the ministry led to those successes which had been long wished for by the nation, and were at length obtained. At the head of the newly introduced party, was the celebrated William Pitt,* from whose vigour the people formed very great expectations; and they were not deceived. A. D.
1758.

The enterprising spirit of the minister seemed to communicate itself to all ranks and classes of men, but more especially to the officers of the army and navy. Admiral Boscawen and general Amherst reduced and demolished Louisburg, in North America, which had been restored to the french by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, and was become the scourge of the british trade, and took five or six ships of the line: Frontenac, and Fort du Quesne, in the same quarter, fell also into the hands of the english: acquisitions that far overbalanced a check which they received at Ticonderago, and the loss of about three hundred english guards, as they were returning under general Bligh, from the coast of France.

The year 1759 was introduced by the taking of Goree on the coast of Africa, by the marines under commodore Keppel. Three capital expeditions had been planned for this year in America, and

CHAP. all of them proved successful. One of them a-
 LXX. gainst the french islands in the West Indies, where
 } Guadaloupe was reduced. The second expedi-
 tion was against Quebec, the capital of French
 Canada. The command was given to general
 Wolfe, a young officer of a truly military genius.
 Wolfe was opposed with far superior forces by
 Montcalm, the best and most successful general
 the french had. Though the situation of the
 country which Wolfe was to attack, and the
 works the french threw up to prevent a descent
 of the english, were deemed impregnable, yet
 Montcalm never relaxed in his vigilance. Wolfe's
 courage and perseverance, however, surmounting
 incredible difficulties, gained the heights of A-
 braham near Quebec. Montcalm was no sooner
 apprised that the english had gained these heights,
 which he had confidently deemed inaccessible,
 than he resolved to hazard a battle: a furious
 encounter quickly began. This was one of the
 most desperate engagements during this war.
 The french general was slain; the second in com-
 mand shared the same fate. Wolfe, who was ad-
 vancing at the head of the grenadiers, received a
 shot in the wrist, but wrapt a handkerchief round
 his arm, and encouraged his men to advance,
 without discovering the least discomposure. He
 next received a shot in the groin, which he had
 concealed. Even after the fatal bullet had pierced
 his breast, he suffered himself unwillingly to be
 carried

carried behind the ranks. Under all the agonies of approaching dissolution, his anxiety for the fortune of the field continued ; and when told that the french army was totally routed and fled on all sides, “ Then,” said he, “ I die happy ;” and immediately expired in a kind of patriotic transport, which seemed to shed over his darkening countenance a gleam of satisfaction and triumph. The surrender of Quebec was the consequence of this victory ; and with it soon after the total cession of all Canada.

CHAP.
LXX.
A. D.
1759.

Sept. 13.

General Amherst, who was the first english general on command in America, conducted the third expedition. His orders were to reduce all Canada, and to join the army under general Wolfe, on the banks of the river St. Lawrence. Amherst executed his commission with so much prudence and activity, that the whole province was soon reduced ; and is now the principal settlement which the english possess in North America.

These successes in India and America were great, though atchieved by no very expensive efforts : on the contrary, the efforts of the english, made in Europe, and the operations of their great ally, the king of Prussia, were astonishing, yet produced no signal advantages. A defensive war in Germany was all that could be expected ; and that he maintained against the united powers of the continent with unexampled bravery. We left

CHAP. the french and imperialists triumphing in re-
LXX. peated successes, and enjoying the fruits of an ad-
 vantageous summer campaign. But as if sum-
 mer were not sufficient for the horrors of war,
 they now resolved to exert them even amidst the
 rigours of winter; and in the depth of that sea-
 son, set down and formed the siege of Leipfic.
 The capture of that city would have been fatal
 to the interests of the king; and by one of those
 rapid marches, for which he was remarkable, he
 seemed, with his army, unexpectedly to rise
 before the town. Such was the terror of his
 arms, that even vanquished as he seemed, the
 french, though superior in numbers, raised the
 siege, and retreated. He was resolved to pursue;
 and at length overtook them at a village
 called Rosbach, where he gained a complete vic-
 tory; and night alone saved their whole army
 from destruction.

In the meantime, the austrians, in another part
 of the empire, were victorious, and had taken
 the prince of Bevern, the king of Prussia's ge-
 neralissimo, prisoner; the king having just
 fought a battle, again undertook a dreadful
 march of two hundred miles in the depth of
 winter, and came up with the austrian army near
 Breslaw. He there disposed his forces with
 his usual celerity and judgment, and obtained
 another bloody victory; and took no less than
 fifteen thousand prisoners. Breslaw, with a gar-

rison of ten thousand men, surrendered soon after. These successes dispirited the enemy, and gave his distressed hanoverian allies fresh hopes of being able to expel the french troops from their territories.

CHAP.
LXX.

Soon after the capitulation of Closter Seven had been signed between the duke of Cumberland and the duke of Richelieu, both sides began to complain that the treaty was not strictly observed. The hanoverians exclaimed against the rapacity of the french general, and the brutality of his soldiers. The french retorted the charge against them; accused them of insolence and insurrection, and resolved to bring them strictly to the terms of their agreement, sensible of their own superiority.. The hanoverians only wanted a pretext to take arms, and a general to head them.

Neither were long wanting:—the oppression of the tax-gatherers, whom the french had appointed, were considered as so severe, that the army once more rose to vindicate their freedom, while Ferdinand, prince of Brunswick, put himself at their head.

Nothing could be more fortunate for the interest of the king of Prussia than this sudden insurrection of the hanoverian forces. From this time he began to oppose the enemy on more equal terms: he faced them on every side; often victorious; sometimes repulsed; but ever for-

CHAP. midable. Never was the art of war carried to
 LXX. such a pitch as by him; and, it must be added,
 its horrors also. In this war Europe saw, with
 astonishment, campaigns carried on in the midst
 of winter; great and bloody battles fought, yet
 producing no visible advantage to the victors.
 At no time, since the days of heroism, were such
 numbers destroyed, so many towns taken, so
 many skirmishes fought, such stratagems prac-
 tised, or such intrepidity discovered. Armies
 were, by the German discipline, considered as com-
 posing one great machine, directed by one com-
 mander, and animated by a single will. From
 the commentary of these campaigns, succeeding
 generals will take their lessons of devastation,
 and improve upon the arts of encreasing human
 calamity.

England was at this time happily retired from
 the miseries which oppressed the rest of Europe;
 yet from her naturally military ardour, she seem-
 ed desirous of sharing those dangers of which she
 was only a spectator. This passion for sharing
 in a continental war, was not less pleasing to the
 king of England, from his native attachments,
 than from a desire of revenge upon the plunderers
 of his country. As soon, therefore, as it was
 known that prince Ferdinand had put himself at
 the head of the hanoverian army, his britannic
 Majesty, in a speech to his parliament, observed,
 that the late success of his ally in Germany, had

given an happy turn to his affairs, which it would be necessary to improve. The commons concurred in his sentiments, and liberally granted supplies both for the service of the king of Prussia, and for enabling the army formed in Hanover to act vigorously in conjunction with him.

CHAP.
LXX.

From sending money over into Germany, the nation began to extend their benefits; and it was soon considered that men would be a more grateful supply. Mr. Pitt, who had at first come into popularity and power, by opposing such measures, was now prevailed on to enter into them with even greater ardour than any of his predecessors. The hopes of putting a speedy end to the war by vigorous measures, the connexions with which he was obliged to co-operate, and perhaps the pleasure he found in pleasing the king, altogether incited him eagerly to push forward a continental war. However, he only coincided with the general inclinations of the people at this time, who, allured by the noble efforts of their only ally, were unwilling to see him fall a sacrifice to the united ambition of his enemies.

In order to indulge this general inclination of assisting the king of Prussia, the duke of Marlborough was sent into Germany with a small body of british forces, to join with prince Ferdinand, whose activity against the french began to be crowned with success. After some small advantages gained by the allied army at Crevelt, the

CHAP. duke of Marlborough dying, his command de-
 LXX. volved upon lord George Sackville, whose second
 was the marquis of Granby, a man universally
 adored by the english army. Unfortunately a
 misunderstanding arose between lord George and
 the commander in chief, which soon had an occa-
 sion of being displayed at the battle of Minden,
 which was fought shortly after. The cause of this
 secret disgust on both sides is not clearly known;
 it is thought that the inquisitive spirit of the en-
 glish general was by no means agreeable to his
 superior in command, who hoped to reap some
 pecuniary advantages the other was unwilling to
 permit. Be this as it will, both armies advancing
 near the town of Minden, the french began the
 attack with great vigour. The british infantry,
 posted in the centre, sustained the principal shock
 of the battle, and broke every body of horse and
 foot that advanced against them; while the hes-
 sian and hanoverian cavalry, posted on the left,
 baffled all the attempts of the enemy, and pushed
 them to the necessity of seeking safety in flight.
 At this instant prince Ferdinand sent orders to
 lord George Sackville, to advance to the charge
 with the british and hanoverian horse; and if these
 orders had been obeyed, the battle of Minden
 would probably have been as memorable as that
 of Blenheim. The french army would have
 been utterly destroyed, or totally routed; and
 driven out of Germany. But whatever was the
 cause,

cause, whether the orders were not sufficiently precise, were misrepresented, or imperfectly understood, the british cavalry did not arrive in time to have any share in the action; so that laurels were the only advantage reaped from the field of battle.

CHAP.
LXX.

After these victories, which were greatly magnified in England; it was supposed that one reinforcement more of british troops would terminate the war in favour of the allies; and a reinforcement was quickly sent. The british army in Germany now, therefore, amounted to above thirty thousand men; and the whole nation was flushed with the hopes of immediate conquest. But these hopes soon vanished in finding victory and defeat successively following each other. The allies were worsted at Corbach 1760, but retrieved their honour at Ermsdorf. A victory at Warburg followed shortly after, and another at Zierenburg; but then they suffered a defeat at Compen; after which both sides went into winter quarters.

The desperate state of the king of Prussia's affairs now required the most vigorous exertions. The russians had taken possession of the kingdom of Prussia, and laid siege to Colberg. Till then he had entertained too mean an opinion of the russians; but he soon found them by far the most formidable enemies he had; they defeated him near Frankfort, where he lost 20,000 of his best men. He became now the tennis ball of

CHAP. fortune ; succeeding defeats seemed to announce
 LXX. his ruin, and all avenues towards peace were shut
 up. At Landshut, the imperial general, Laudohn, defeated his army under Fouquet, in which he had great dependence, and thereby opened to the austrians a ready gate into Silesia. None but his prussian majesty would have thought of continuing the war under such repeated losses ; but every defeat he received, seemed to give him fresh spirits. However, towards the latter end of the campaign, he defeated the imperialists in the battle of Torgau, in which count Daun, the imperial general, was wounded. This was the best fought action the king of Prussia had ever been engaged in, but it cost him ten thousand of his best troops.

During these important transactions on the continent, the efforts of England, over every part of the globe, were amazing. The king of Prussia received a subsidy ; a large body of english forces commanded the extensive peninsula of India ; another army of twenty thousand men confirmed their conquest in North America ; there were thirty thousand men employed in Germany ; and several other bodies dispersed in the different garrisons in the various parts of the world : but all these were nothing to the force maintained at sea, which carried command wherever it came, and had totally annihilated the french power on that element. The courage and the conduct of
 the

the english admirals had surpassed whatever had been read of in history; neither superior force or number; nor even the terrors of the tempest, could intimidate them. Admiral Hawke gained a complete victory over an equal number of french ships, on the coast of Bretagne, in Quiberon Bay, in the midst of a tempest, during the darkness of the night, and, what a seaman fears still more, upon a rocky shore.

CHAP.
LXX.

In the midst of these glorious successes died George II. in the seventy-seventh year of his age, and thirty-fourth of his reign. He was suddenly taken ill on the twenty-fifth of October, and expired almost instantly. His character is by no means complicated: violent in his temper, but humane and candid in his disposition; he conciliated the affection, if not the esteem of those who were most about his person. His partial attachment to german politics, made the early part of his reign unpopular; but the bold spirit with which he resented the insults offered to his crown, and the brilliant conquests with which the latter years of his reign were adorned, have endeared his memory to the english nation.

A.D.
1760.

His Britannic Majesty was succeeded in his regal and electoral dominions, by his grandson, George III. a prince of an amiable disposition, and the most unblemished manners; whose first speech to his parliament excited the highest hopes of a patriotic reign. “ Born and educated

“ in

CHAP. “in this country, I glory,” said he, “in the
LXX. “name of Briton.” The first act of his reign was to convince the public that the death of his predecessor should not relax the operations of war—Accordingly, in 1761, the island of Belleisle, on the coast of France, surrendered to his majesty’s ships and forces under commodore Keppel and general Hodgson: as did the important fortrefs of Pondicherry, in the East Indies, to colonel Coote and admiral Stevens. The operations against the french in the West Indies still continued; and, in 1762, the island of Martinico, hitherto deemed impregnable, with the islands of Grenada, Grenadellas, St. Vincent, and others of less note, were subdued by the british arms, with inconceivable rapidity.

A. D. By this time the famous family compact among
1762. all the branches of the Burbon family had been concluded, and it was found necessary to declare war against Spain; who having been hitherto no principals in the quatrel, had scandalously abused their neutrality, in favour of the french. A respectable armament was fitted out under admiral Pocock, having the earl of Albermale on board. to command the land forces: and the vitals of the spanish monarchy were struck at by the reduction of the Havannah, the strongest and most important fort which his Catholic Majesty held in the West Indies.

The

The loss of the Havannah, with the ships and treasures there taken from the spaniards, were succeeded by the reduction of Manilla, in the East Indies, by general Draper, and admiral Cornish, with the capture of the Trinidad, reckoned worth three million of dollars. To counteract these dreadful blows given to the family compact, the french and spaniards opened their last resource, which was to quarrel with, and invade Portugal, which had been always under the protection of the british arms : his Britannic Majesty was therefore obliged to send armaments both by sea and land ; and this force found no great difficulty in checking the progress of the spaniards. In this service general Burgoyne bore a distinguished part.

Nor did the attention of Great Britain to the safety of Portugal, diminish her exertions or her success in Germany, where the french resolved to make the most powerful efforts, while the spaniards, in order to divide her strength, entered the dominions of his Most Faithful Majesty. Nevertheless, prince Ferdinand baffled all the attempts of the french ; obliged them to abandon Gottingen, the only place which they possessed in the dominions of his Britannic Majesty, and which they had fortified at great expence ; he gained several advantages over them, particularly at Graebenstein, Homburg, and Melsungen ;

three

CHAP. three actions in which the british troops, under
LXX. the marquis of Granby, acquired signal honour.

While prince Ferdinand was thus exerting himself with a degree of vigour and success, the fortune of the King of Prussia wore a variety of appearances, in consequence of certain great singular revolutions in the north. At the close of the last campaign, the dominions of his prussian majesty, whose forces were much cut down, lay entirely at the mercy of his enemies, who were now in a situation to begin their operations more early than formerly, as well as to sustain them with more vigour and concert. A complete victory, (an event by no means probable) did not seem sufficient to save him from ruin, when the tremendous storm, ready to burst upon his head from different quarters, was quickly dispersed by one of those sudden and extraordinary changes in human affairs, which often decide the fate of nations, outstrip all foresight, and confound the reasonings of the wisest politicians.

Elizabeth, empress of Russia, second daughter of Peter the Great, having finished her worldly career in 1762, was succeeded by her nephew, the duke of Holstein, in the name of Peter III. This prince mounted the throne possessed of an enthusiastic admiration of his prussian majesty's virtues, and to whom he gave peace, and whose principles

principles and practice he seemed to have adopted as the directories of his future reign. He might have surmounted the effects of those peculiarities, unpopular as they then were in Russia, but it is said, he aimed at reformation in his dominions, which even Peter the Great durst not attempt; and that he even ventured to cut off the beards of his clergy : his memory has been likewise accused of certain infidelities, which had enraged his consort, Catherine. Be this as it may, it is certain that an universal conspiracy was formed against him, and that he scarcely knew an interval between the loss of his crown and his life, of which he was deprived while under an ignominious confinement. That his conduct with regard to Prussia, was not the sole cause of his deposition, seems pretty evident from the measures of his successor, who now reigns by the title of Catherine II. This princess declared to the Prussian ambassador, that she was resolved to observe inviolable, in all points, the perpetual peace concluded under the present reign.

The king of Prussia did not fail to profit by this great and unexpected revolution in his favour. He gained several advantages over the imperialists; and count Daun was obliged to abandon all his strong posts in Silesia, and fall back into Bohemia.

CHAP.
LXX.

The british empire had now attained an extent that astonished the world, and which far exceeded that of ancient Rome. Every where victorious by land and sea in both hemispheres, and in all quarters of the globe, it seemed only necessary for England to determine what share of her conquests she chose to retain, and what terms she would impose upon the house of bourbon, as her german allies were happily in a condition to make terms for themselves. It was therefore sincerely hoped by the greatest part of the english nation, that the glorious opportunity of finally humbling this haughty family was at length arrived ; and that the family compact, lately so alarming to Great Britain, would terminate in the confusion of her ambitious enemies. In the midst of our splendid conquests, however, a negociation with the bourbon courts was begun by the ministers of his Britannic Majesty ; and the definitive treaty of peace was signed at Paris in the beginning of the year.

A. D.
1763.
Feb. 10.

The king of Prussia, finding himself deserted by his grand ally, concluded a treaty of peace with the empress queen, at Hubertsburg ; the substance of which was, that a mutual restitution of conquests should take place, and that both parties should be put in the same situation as at the commencement of hostilities. Thus was terminated, happily for the present repose of mankind, but prematurely

prematurely for the glory of Great Britain, and without a proper attention to her interests, the most active, splendid, and universal war that ever divided the human race.

CHAP.
LXX.

F I N . I S .

